

**Ideological Representations in
English and Arabic News Reports:
A Thematic Structure Analysis**

Lubna Al-Jayrudy

Submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

Heriot-Watt University

School of Management and Languages

September 2011

This copy of the thesis has been supplied on condition that anyone who consults it is understood to recognise that the copyright rests with its author and that no quotation from the thesis and no information derived from it may be published without the prior written consent of the author or of the University (as may be appropriate).

ABSTRACT

The broad aim of this study is to investigate the efficacy of Theme/Rheme analysis in identifying underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports. The study takes as its starting point the assumption that the different choices of Theme/Rheme, their organization at the local and global structures and the presentation of Given/New information can elucidate ideological factors that underlie news presentation in English and Arabic. This thesis designs a conceptual framework which combines structural, ideological and linguistic approaches to Discourse Analysis. It also develops an innovative methodological model to analyse Theme/Rheme in Arabic Verbal and Nominal clauses and enhances the linguistic tools to analyse the thematic structures in English and Arabic texts. The thesis applies the developed model, methods and tools to a selected corpus of English and Arabic news reports in order to identify ideological representations of Syria in mainstream online news media. The study seeks to analyse and compare the different choices of Theme/Rheme, nominalization and lexical variations in the thematic structures, on the one hand, and their implications and attribution of causality and responsibility, on the other hand. These issues are investigated in a corpus of English and Arabic news reports during times of political assassinations in Lebanon and the implication of Syrian involvement. Based on the recurrent preferences in the thematic structures of the selected corpus, the study concludes that developed model, methods and tools help identify underlying ideologies in the presentations of Syria in both English and Arabic news reports.

ACADEMIC REGISTRY
Research Thesis Submission



| | | | |
|---|--------------------------|--|----------------------|
| Name: | Lubna Al-Jayrudy | | |
| School/PGI: | Management and Languages | | |
| Version: <i>(i.e. First, Resubmission, Final)</i> | Final | Degree Sought (Award and Subject area) | Doctor of Philosophy |

Declaration

In accordance with the appropriate regulations I hereby submit my thesis and I declare that:

- 1) the thesis embodies the results of my own work and has been composed by myself
- 2) where appropriate, I have made acknowledgement of the work of others and have made reference to work carried out in collaboration with other persons
- 3) the thesis is the correct version of the thesis for submission and is the same version as any electronic versions submitted*.
- 4) my thesis for the award referred to, deposited in the Heriot-Watt University Library, should be made available for loan or photocopying and be available via the Institutional Repository, subject to such conditions as the Librarian may require
- 5) I understand that as a student of the University I am required to abide by the Regulations of the University and to conform to its discipline.

* *Please note that it is the responsibility of the candidate to ensure that the correct version of the thesis is submitted.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|--|-------|------------|
| Signature of Candidate: | | Date: | 09/09/2011 |
|-------------------------|--|-------|------------|

Submission

| | |
|--|--|
| Submitted By <i>(name in capitals)</i> : | |
| Signature of Individual Submitting: | |
| Date Submitted: | |

For Completion in Academic Registry

| | |
|--|-------|
| Received in the Academic Registry by <i>(name in capitals)</i> : | |
| <i>Method of Submission</i> <i>(Handed in to Academic Registry; posted through internal/external mail):</i> | |
| <i>E-thesis Submitted (mandatory for final theses from January 2009)</i> | |
| Signature: | Date: |

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| | |
|---|-----------|
| List of Abbreviations | v |
| List of Tables and Figures | vi |
| | |
| 1 Introduction | 1 |
| 1.1 Initial Observations | 1 |
| 1.2 Aims and Objectives of the Study | 2 |
| 1.3 Content and Structure of the Thesis | 3 |
| | |
| 2 The Study of News Discourse | 6 |
| 2.1 What is News and Why Study News Media? | 6 |
| 2.2 The Construction of the News | 8 |
| 2.2.1 News Producers | 8 |
| 2.2.2 The Roles of Discourse | 9 |
| 2.2.2.1 The Construction of Meaning and Reality | 9 |
| 2.2.2.2 Reading Position and Subject Position | 11 |
| 2.2.3 The Reception of the News | 13 |
| 2.2.3.1 The Audience's Construction of Meaning | 13 |
| 2.2.3.2 Audience Design | 14 |
| 2.2.3.3 Speech Acts | 16 |
| 2.3 The Structures of the News | 17 |
| 2.3.1 Textual and Contextual Dimensions of Discourse | 17 |
| 2.3.2 Textual and Contextual Dimensions of News Discourse | 19 |
| 2.3.2.1 Text Types and Contextual Factors | 19 |
| 2.3.2.2 Reports and Editorials | 21 |
| 2.3.2.3 News Discourse in English and Arabic | 23 |
| 2.3.3 Global and Local Structures of News Reports | 28 |
| 2.3.3.1 Macrostructures: Topics, Macropropositions and News Headlines | 29 |
| 2.3.3.2 Microstructures: Presuppositions and Implications | 33 |
| 2.3.4 News Style and Ideology | 34 |
| 2.4 Ideology in the News: A Socio-Cognitive Approach | 37 |
| 2.4.1 A Multidisciplinary Theory of Ideology | 38 |
| 2.4.2 False Consciousness and Common Sense | 39 |
| 2.4.3 Persuasion and Media Control | 41 |
| 2.5 Critical Discourse Analysis and the News | 45 |
| 2.5.1 What is CDA? | 46 |
| 2.5.2 CDA and Discourse | 48 |
| 2.5.3 Ideology and Power in CDA | 49 |
| 2.5.4 Criticisms of CDA | 51 |
| 2.6 Concluding Remarks | 54 |

| | | |
|------------|--|------------|
| 3 | A THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK FOR THEME- RHEME ANALYSIS | 56 |
| 3.1 | Introductory Remarks | 56 |
| 3.2 | A Historical Background | 57 |
| 3.3 | The Prague School approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis | 58 |
| 3.3.1 | Functional Sentence Perspective | 58 |
| 3.3.2 | Theme as Topic and Known Information | 59 |
| 3.3.3 | The Notion of Communicative Dynamism | 60 |
| 3.3.4 | The Three-Level Approach to Syntax and Thematic Progression | 63 |
| 3.4 | The Hallidayan Approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis | 67 |
| 3.4.1 | The Definition of Theme and Rheme | 68 |
| 3.4.2 | Topical, Textual and Interpersonal Themes | 69 |
| 3.4.3 | The Information Structure and the Thematic Structure | 72 |
| 3.4.3.1 | The Information Structure: Given and New | 72 |
| 3.4.3.2 | The Thematic Structure: Theme and Rheme | 74 |
| 3.4.4 | The Concept of Markedness | 75 |
| 3.4.5 | Unmarked Thematic Structure: Theme and Mood | 77 |
| 3.4.6 | Marked Thematic Structures | 79 |
| 3.4.6.1 | Fronted Theme | 80 |
| 3.4.6.2 | Predicated Theme | 82 |
| 3.4.6.3 | Identifying Theme | 83 |
| 3.4.7 | Halliday's Approach in Other Languages | 84 |
| 3.4.8 | Concluding Remarks | 87 |
| 3.5 | The Approach of Traditional Arab Grammarians to Theme- Rheme Analysis | 88 |
| 3.5.1 | The Structure of the Arabic Language: The Verbal Sentence and the Nominal Sentence | 88 |
| 3.5.2 | The Traditional Treatment of Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic | 92 |
| 3.5.3 | Conjuncts, Disjuncts and Adjuncts | 95 |
| 3.5.4 | Problems Encountered | 98 |
| 3.6 | The Approach of Modern Arab Linguists to Theme-Rheme Analysis | 100 |
| 3.6.1 | An FSP Approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis in Modern Standard Arabic | 100 |
| 3.6.2 | Problems Encountered | 102 |
| 3.7 | Developing a Theoretical Model | 104 |
| 3.8 | Concluding Remarks | 110 |
| | | |
| 4 | CORPORA AND METHODOLOGY | 112 |
| 4.1 | Aims of the Project and Implications for Methodology | 112 |
| 4.2 | Corpus Creation | 113 |
| 4.2.1 | Using a Corpus in the Study of Language | 114 |
| 4.2.2 | The Selection of the Data | 115 |
| 4.2.3 | Corpus Description | 119 |
| 4.3 | Applying Halliday's Model to Arabic-Language News Reports | 125 |

| | | |
|------------|---|-----|
| 4.3.1 | Theme-Rheme Redefined | 125 |
| 4.3.2 | Marked Themes | 128 |
| 4.3.2.1 | Fronted Theme | 128 |
| 4.3.2.2 | Predicated Theme | 130 |
| 4.3.2.3 | Identifying Theme | 131 |
| 4.4 | The Information System in the analysis of the Data | 132 |
| 4.5 | Analytical Methods and Tools | 134 |
| 4.5.1 | Qualitative and Quantitative Methods | 135 |
| 4.5.2 | Transformational Processes | 136 |
| 4.5.2.1 | Thematization | 137 |
| 4.5.2.2 | Nominalization | 138 |
| 4.5.3 | Lexical Features and Meaning Relations | 140 |
| 4.6 | Concluding Remarks | 143 |
| | | |
| 5 | DATA ANALYSIS | 145 |
| 5.1 | The Analysis of Global Structures | 145 |
| 5.1.1 | A Case Study of News Reports on Hariri’s Murder Probe | 146 |
| 5.1.1.1 | The Analysis of the English News Reports | 146 |
| 5.1.1.2 | The Analysis of the Arabic News Reports | 159 |
| 5.1.2 | Findings of the Global Structural Analysis | 178 |
| 5.2 | The Analysis of Local Structures | 181 |
| 5.2.1 | The Analysis of the English News Reports in Group 2 | 181 |
| 5.2.2 | The Analysis of the Arabic News Reports in Group 2 | 189 |
| 5.2.3 | The Analysis of “Evidence” in Group 3 | 195 |
| 5.2.4 | The Analysis of “Accusation” in Group 3 | 200 |
| 5.2.5 | Concluding Remarks | 202 |
| 5.3 | The Analysis of Terms Opposing Syria: Implications and Presuppositions | 203 |
| 5.3.1 | Introductory Remarks | 203 |
| 5.3.2 | The Analysis of “Critic of Syria(n)” in the English News Reports | 208 |
| 5.3.3 | The Analysis of (MuntaqiD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports | 210 |
| 5.3.4 | The Analysis of “Opponent of Syria(n)” in the English News Reports | 212 |
| 5.3.5 | The Analysis of (Mu’aariD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports | 213 |
| 5.3.6 | The Analysis of (MunaahiD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports | 217 |
| 5.3.7 | The Analysis of “Anti-Syria(n)” in the English News Reports | 221 |
| 5.3.8 | The Analysis of (Mu’aady Li Suryaa) and (Munaawi’ Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports | 225 |
| 5.3.9 | Concluding Remarks | 228 |
| 5.4 | Nominalization and Lexical Variations | 233 |
| 5.4.1 | Introductory Remarks | 233 |
| 5.4.2 | Thematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation” | 235 |
| 5.4.3 | Thematization of “Killing”, “Assassination” and “Slaying” | 237 |
| 5.4.4 | Thematization of “Blast”, “Explosion”, “Attack” and “Bombing” | 239 |

| | | |
|-------------------|---|------------|
| 5.4.5 | Nominalization as Marked Themes in the English News Reports | 241 |
| 5.4.6 | Nominalization as Marked Themes in the Arabic News Reports | 243 |
| 5.4.7 | Rhematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation” | 246 |
| 5.4.8 | Rhematization of “Killing”, “Assassination” and “Slaying” | 249 |
| 5.5.9 | Rhematization of “Blast”, “Explosion”, “Attack” and “Bombing” | 251 |
| 5.4.10 | Concluding Remarks | 253 |
| 6 | CONCLUSION | 255 |
| 6.1 | Summary of the Objectives and Methods of Analysis | 255 |
| 6.2 | Findings of the Study | 256 |
| 6.3 | Original Contribution | 260 |
| 6.4 | Indications for Further Research | 261 |
| | | |
| APPENDICES | | |
| | Appendix A- References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 1: Titles, Dates and Size | 263 |
| | Appendix B- References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 2: Titles, Dates and Size | 264 |
| | Appendix C- References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 3: Titles, Dates and Size | 265 |
| | Appendix D- References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 4: Titles, Dates and Size | 266 |
| | Appendix E- References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 5: Titles, Dates and Size | 267 |
| | Appendix F- The Qalam Transliteration Methodology Used Throughout the Study | 268 |
| | | |
| | BIBLIOGRAPHY | 269 |

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

| | |
|------|----------------------------------|
| AFP | Agence France-Presse |
| BBC | British Broadcasting Corporation |
| CA | Classical Arabic |
| CDA | Critical Discourse Analysis |
| CD | Communicative Dynamism |
| CL | Critical Linguistics |
| CNN | Cable News Network |
| CT | Continuous Theme |
| DT | Derived Theme |
| FL | Functional Linguistics |
| FSP | Functional Sentence Perspective |
| HT | Hyper Theme |
| MSA | Modern Standard Arabic |
| NBN | National Broadcasting Network |
| R | Rheme |
| SFL | Systemic Functional Linguistics |
| SLP | Simple Linear Progression |
| TAGs | Traditional Arab Grammarians |
| T | Theme |
| TP | Thematic Progression |
| US | United States |

LIST OF TABLES AND FIGURES

TABLES

| | | |
|------------|--|-----|
| Table 3.1 | Types of Themes in Halliday's Model | 69 |
| Table 3.2 | Mood Type and Unmarked Theme Selection | 78 |
| Table 3.3 | Fronted Themes in English | 81 |
| Table 3.4 | Thematic Structure of Clause with Predicated Theme | 83 |
| Table 3.5 | Thematic Equative | 84 |
| Table 4.1 | The Selected News Media and the Numbers of English and Arabic News Reports | 119 |
| Table 4.2 | The Topics, Dates and Size of Each Group in the Selected Corpus | 123 |
| Table 4.3 | The Description of the Selected News Reports on Tueni's Assassination | 123 |
| Table 5.1 | Theme-Rheme Organization in <i>Syria Times</i> Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 147 |
| Table 5.2 | Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Manar English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 148 |
| Table 5.3 | Theme-Rheme Organization of Al-Jazeera English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 150 |
| Table 5.4 | Theme-Rheme Organization in <i>Alarab</i> English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 152 |
| Table 5.5 | Theme-Rheme Organization in the BBC English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 155 |
| Table 5.6 | Theme-Rheme Organization in the CNN English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 157 |
| Table 5.7 | Thematic Patterns in the English News Reports on Hariri's Murder Probe | 159 |
| Table 5.8 | Theme-Rheme Organization in <i>Teshreen</i> Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 160 |
| Table 5.9 | Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Manar Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 162 |
| Table 5.10 | Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Jazeera Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 165 |
| Table 5.11 | Theme-Rheme Organization in <i>Alarab</i> Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 167 |
| Table 5.12 | Theme-Rheme Organization in the BBC Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 171 |
| Table 5.13 | Theme-Rheme Organization in the CNN Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 174 |
| Table 5.14 | Thematic Patterns in the Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 177 |
| Table 5.15 | Thematic Patterns in the English Data | 178 |
| Table 5.16 | Thematic Patterns in the Arabic Data | 179 |
| Table 5.17 | Thematic Patterns in the Data | 179 |
| Table 5.18 | Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of "Critic of Syria(n)" in the English News Reports | 208 |
| Table 5.19 | Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of (MuntaqiD) in the Arabic News Reports | 210 |
| Table 5.20 | Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of "Opponent" in the English News Reports | 213 |

| | | |
|------------|--|-----|
| Table 5.21 | Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of (Mu‘aariD) in the Arabic News Reports | 213 |
| Table 5.22 | “Opponent” in Marked Thematic Structures in the Arabic Data | 216 |
| Table 5.23 | Results of Analysing (MunaahiD Li Suryaa) in Marked Thematic Structures in the Arabic Data | 219 |
| Table 5.24 | Results of Thematic Analysis of (MunaahiD) in Unmarked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports | 220 |
| Table 5.25 | Results of Informational Analysis of (MunaahiD) in Unmarked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports | 220 |
| Table 5.26 | Results of Analysing “Anti-Syria(n)” in the English News Reports | 222 |
| Table 5.27 | Results of Informational Analysis of “Anti-Syria” in Theme Position in the English News Reports | 223 |
| Table 5.28 | Results of Analysing “Anti-Syria(n)” in Marked Thematic Structures in the English News Reports | 224 |
| Table 5.29 | Results of Analysing (Mu‘aady) in the Arabic News Reports | 227 |
| Table 5.30 | Results of Analysing (Munaawi’) in the Arabic News Reports | 227 |
| Table 5.31 | Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in News Headlines | 228 |
| Table 5.32 | Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Theme Positions in the English News Reports | 229 |
| Table 5.33 | Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Theme Positions in the Arabic News Reports | 229 |
| Table 5.34 | Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Marked Thematic Structures in the English News Reports | 230 |
| Table 5.35 | Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Marked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports | 230 |
| Table 5.36 | Thematization of “Accusations” and “Cooperation”: Results | 236 |
| Table 5.37 | Thematization of the Second Nominalization Group: Results | 239 |
| Table 5.38 | Thematization of the Third Nominalization Group: Results | 241 |
| Table 5.39 | Nominalization as Marked Themes in the English News Reports: Results | 242 |
| Table 5.40 | Nominalization as Marked Themes in the Arabic News Reports: Results | 245 |
| Table 5.41 | Rhematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation”: Results | 248 |
| Table 5.42 | Rhematization of the Second Nominalization Group: Results | 250 |
| Table 5.43 | Rhematization of the Third Nominalization Group: Results | 252 |
| Table 7.1 | The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Tueni | 263 |
| Table 7.2 | The Selected News Reports on Hariri’s Murder Probe | 264 |
| Table 7.3 | The Selected News Reports on the US Accusations against Syria | 265 |
| Table 7.4 | The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Gemayel | 266 |
| Table 7.5 | The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Eido | 267 |

FIGURES

| | | |
|------------|--|-----|
| Figure 2.1 | Inverted Pyramid Structure | 24 |
| Figure 3.1 | Linear TP | 66 |
| Figure 3.2 | TP with a Continuous Theme | 66 |
| Figure 3.3 | TP with Derived Themes | 67 |
| Figure 5.1 | Thematic Patterns in Al-Manar English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe | 149 |

| | | |
|-------------|--|-----|
| Figure 5.2 | Thematic Patterns in Al-Jazeera English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 152 |
| Figure 5.3 | Thematic Patterns in <i>Alarab</i> English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 154 |
| Figure 5.4 | Thematic Patterns in the BBC English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 156 |
| Figure 5.5 | Thematic Patterns in the CNN English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 158 |
| Figure 5.6 | Thematic Patterns in <i>Teshreen</i> Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 161 |
| Figure 5.7 | Thematic Patterns in Al-Manar Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 165 |
| Figure 5.8 | Thematic Patterns in Al-Jazeera Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 167 |
| Figure 5.9 | Thematic Patterns in <i>Alarab</i> Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe | 170 |
| Figure 5.10 | Thematic Patterns in the BBC Arabic on Hariri's Murder Probe | 173 |
| Figure 5.11 | Thematic Patterns in the CNN Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder | 176 |
| Figure 5.12 | A Conceptual Scale of Relative Negativity of the English-Language Terms | 204 |
| Figure 5.13 | Results of Survey: Question 1 | 205 |
| Figure 5.14 | Results of Survey: Question 2 | 205 |
| Figure 5.15 | Results of Survey: Question 3 | 206 |
| Figure 5.16 | A Conceptual Scale of Relative Negativity of the Arabic-Language Terms | 207 |
| Figure 5.17 | Frequency of the English-Language Terms Opposing Syria | 231 |
| Figure 5.18 | Frequency of the Arabic-Language Terms Opposing Syria | 232 |
| Figure 5.19 | A Conceptual Scale of Nominalization and Implication of Agency | 234 |

CHAPTER ONE

INTRODUCTION

1.1 Initial Observations

Although a considerable amount of work has been published on news discourse analysis and the concepts of ideology, control and power (e.g. van Dijk 1998, Fowler 1991, Fowler et al. 1979 and Hodge and Kress 1993), much less work would seem to be available, especially in Arabic, on the analysis of Theme-Rheme in the textual structures of news discourse. The textual structures involve the descriptions of all levels of discourse, i.e. sentence grammatical aspects, such as thematic structures, Theme-Rheme organization, thematization, nominalization, passivization and transitivity, sentence meanings, such as lexical variations, propositions, presuppositions and implications. The starting point of this study was the assumption that news discourse in Arabic may be presented differently from that in English. The linguistic and the textual differences in English and Arabic news discourse may be linked to the different social representations and the underlying ideologies which news media have as well as the readers' expectations of what is presented in news texts¹. One of the motivations of this study was the wish to conduct a contrastive analysis of English and Arabic news discourse which belongs to the same text type. This study aims to show the similarities and differences in news presentation and to examine the different semantic, syntactic and thematic structures in news presentation in English and Arabic reports.

Another motivation of this study was the wish to examine non-translated Arabic and English news discourse, especially at the level of Theme-Rheme and the analysis of transformational processes of nominalizations and thematization in the thematic structures of the news. Most of the works on Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic tend to apply the Traditional Arab Grammarians' approach to Arabic Nominal sentences. Very few works have attempted to apply other approaches, such as the Functional Sentence Perspective approach, to Arabic texts. Even less work would seem to examine the similarities and differences of the thematic structures in English and Arabic news discourse (e.g. Hatim 1987 and 1989, Obiedat 1990, and Parkinson 1981). These works

¹ Evidence in Samia Bazzi's (2009) *Arab News and Conflict: A Multidisciplinary Discourse Study* shows that news reports in Arabic and English frequently do present different ideologies.

tend to be either too general, or to be concerned chiefly with issues related to translations from one language to another and syntax.

A corpus of Arabic and English news reports will be analysed in terms of underlying ideologies, thematic patterns, Theme-Rheme organization, thematization, and nominalization and their implications, using a framework which draws on Critical Discourse Analysis, Daneš's thematic patterns and Halliday's functional approach. The chosen texts are collected from popular online news media which report on global and local issues, especially those related to the Middle East and the Syria-Lebanon relationship. To date, there has not been a comprehensive and contrastive study of Theme-Rheme analysis, nominalization and thematization in news discourse in English and Arabic.

1.2 Aims and Objectives of the Study

The broad aim of this study is to investigate the efficacy of Theme/Rheme analysis in elucidating underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports. In this study, it is assumed that news journalists, whether consciously or unconsciously, construct their discourse to produce and reproduce dominant ideologies so that preferred views and ideas are allowed to be expressed in discourse (van Dijk 1998 and Simpson 1993). The production and reproduction of ideologies can be managed through discourse and manifested by means of the linguistic choices, lexical expressions, implications and presuppositions, as well as the syntactic and textual structures which news writers have at hand to construct language as social reality (Berger and Luckmann 1967 and Searle 1996). In this study, we seek to identify the different ideological representations of Syria in a corpus of English and Arabic news reports. By ideological representations, we refer here to the socially-shared beliefs, values and attitudes expressed in news media discourse particularly towards Syria and its role in the assassinations in Lebanon between 2005 and 2007. We propose an enhanced conceptual framework which combines the different approaches to Discourse Analysis (DA) - the analysis of discourse in its written and spoken forms and its use in social context (Smith and Bell 2007) - namely the analysis of news construction, the structural model, the socio-cognitive approach to ideology and Critical Discourse Analysis. We also seek to develop new methods and tools capable of identifying the representations of Syria in the English and Arabic news reports. We are particularly interested in the way Theme and

Rheme elements are organized, ordered and developed in the two sets of texts. The present study attempts to analyse the different thematic patterns, structures, macrostructures, Theme/Rheme choices and their implications in the data. The specific objectives of this study are therefore as follows:

- to develop a theoretical framework for news discourse analysis capable of investigating underlying ideologies
- to develop a methodological approach to Theme/Rheme analysis in English and Arabic languages
- to improve and extend the linguistic tools and methods in the analysis of English and Arabic news reports
- to use these tools to investigate the way Syria is presented in mainstream online news media reports

The study does not aim at justifying the different linguistic, textual and structural strategies and differences in news presentation in the English and Arabic news reports. Rather, it aims at describing these strategies, identifying any differences and suggesting some reasons why English and Arabic news reports differ along certain parameters. It will therefore be argued that these linguistic and structural differences may be explained in terms of underlying ideologies in news presentation in the two languages.

1.3 Content and Structure of the Thesis

In this study, we shall gradually develop a conceptual framework capable of investigating underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports. The conceptual framework will define and develop the concepts of discourse and ideology and propose structural, ideological and linguistic approaches to news discourse analysis. We shall then develop a methodological approach to analyse, compare and contrast the thematic structures and the linguistic choices of Theme and Rheme in English and Arabic. According to Halliday (2004), the mapping of the Theme-Rheme system into Given-New information helps speakers/writers to produce a variety of rhetorical effects, hence project certain views and ideologies. The aim of this study is to investigate this issue in relation to the presentations of Syria in a corpus of English and Arabic news reports by employing methods of Theme/Rheme analysis and Given/New information.

Firstly, Chapter 2 presents the literature review within which the notion of the news is studied in relation to discourse and ideology. Initially, we will introduce the notions of the “news” and “news media discourse”. A brief introduction to news media production and reception will help readers understand the different social, cognitive and discursive factors which contribute to the construction of the news. The construction of the news in terms of reading and subject positions, meaning and social reality and hence ideologies, manipulation and control will be discussed in this chapter. Notions such as Topics, Themes, propositions, presuppositions and implications, which could prove useful in the analysis of the textual structures of news discourse, will also be investigated. A number of other areas, namely socio-cognitive and critical linguistics, will be surveyed in an attempt to identify relevant models to investigate the underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports.

In Chapter 3, we develop a functional framework for the analysis of thematic structures and Theme-Rheme elements in English and Arabic clauses. Firstly, we present the functional linguistic approaches adopted by the Prague School and Halliday’s functional grammar. The definitions of Theme, Rheme, Given and New information will be discussed in these two approaches. Secondly, we present the traditional and modern approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic. We will discuss the structure of the Arabic clause and the traditional and modern treatments of Theme-Rheme elements in Classical Arabic and Modern Standard Arabic. The problems encountered in the traditional and modern approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in the thematic structure of Arabic clauses will also be discussed.

Corpora and methodology are discussed in Chapter 4. Firstly, we discuss the creation of the corpus and the collection of the data. Secondly, we design an objective model to analyse the thematic structures of the selected English and Arabic news reports, based mainly on Halliday’s approach. Theme-Rheme elements will be redefined in Arabic and the marked and unmarked thematic structures will be discussed in relation to Arabic news reports. We then introduce the analytical methods and toolkit for the analysis of the data. The transformational processes of thematization and nominalization and the linguistic variations and implications are among the tools which are discussed in the methodology chapter.

Chapter 5 presents the data analysis and discusses the findings related to the thematic structures and the underlying ideologies in news presentation in the selected corpus. We start with the analysis of the thematic patterns in a sample study and then present the findings of Theme-Rheme development in the English and Arabic corpora. An analysis of the way Syria is presented in the unmarked and marked thematic structures of the English and Arabic news reports will then be presented and discussed. Qualitative and quantitative analyses of the linguistic variations and implications used in the data to portray subjects and social actors in Theme-Rheme structures will then be carried out. We then analyse the thematic and informational roles of key nominalised constituents and thematization and discuss the findings and trends which emerge from the analyses of the English and Arabic news reports.

Finally, Chapter 6 summarizes the objectives and methods of the qualitative and quantitative analyses and recaps on the main findings of this study. The original contribution of this thesis to news discourse analysis in English and Arabic is restated. Suggestions and indications for further research will also be made.

CHAPTER TWO

THE STUDY OF NEWS DISCOURSE

The purpose of this chapter is to present a theoretical background of the study of the language of the news and the notions of discourse and ideology. Section 2.1 defines the concept of the “news” and discusses some of the reasons why linguists and analysts study the language of news media. Section 2.2 explores the different stages of news construction, namely news production, the roles of discourse and news reception. The global and local structures which are necessary to understand and interpret the different meanings and ideologies in the news are discussed in section 2.3. The notions of propositions, implications, global and local themes, and news style are also introduced in this section. Section 2.4 presents the different approaches to ideology and the notions of hegemony, naturalization, common sense, persuasion and control. Finally, section 2.5 reviews one of the relevant approaches to news discourse analysis. Critical Discourse Analysis, CDA, aims to relate the social and discursive practices in the language of the news to the notions of ideology, power and control.

2.1 What is News and Why Study News Media

News is a late Middle English word which means new information about recent events (Reah 2002). This definition may indicate that news includes any happening anywhere in the world over the last 24 hours. However, this is not the case. News does not include everything. Decisions about what to include and exclude in a specific newspaper have to be made. These decisions are usually seen as editorial decisions. Editors, among other news producers, include the news items which they consider suitable and of interest to the target audience and exclude those which are of little interest to them. Furthermore, news is managed by many newswriters, such as journalists, editors, printers, camera operators, and sound technicians, and is selected to reflect the social and economic interests of the owners of the news institution and the political party whom the owners support (see sections 2.2.1 and 2.4.4). Hence, the definition of “news” should be narrowed down to “information about recent events that are of interest to a sufficiently large group, or that may affect the lives of a sufficiently large group” (Reah 2002: 1).

In order to understand what news is and how it is presented, it is necessary to take account of the different, yet interrelated, communities involved in the study of news media. According to Fowler et al. (1979), there are at least three communities. First, there are the communities of news producers and receivers who constitute the act of communication. The study of news media in terms of processes of news production and reception, i.e. how news is produced, received and constructed, and the roles of discourse will be discussed in section 2.2. The study of news media should also consider the structures of the news, i.e. how news is globally and locally structured and presented in discourse. The structures of the news and notions of presuppositions and implicatures will be presented in section 2.3. Second, there is the implied community which is created, reported and recorded by the news media, i.e. the social relations and events of the people and the world implied in the content of the news. Finally, there is the real-world community, which represents the real actions, events and relations involving the people, who are accurately or inaccurately, reported in the news. The implied world and the real world communities should be understood in the context of ideology, power, manipulation and language use. Ideology in the news will be discussed in section 2.4.

News media, such as radio, television and newspapers, attract a large number of audiences, hence referred to as “mass media” (Breen 2007). They also offer linguists and analysts great deal of advantages. Unlike face-to-face communication, mass communication and mass media in particular have the advantages of availability and accessibility (Bell 1991). The language of the news is largely available and easily accessible by large numbers of hearers and readers. The advanced technology of the twenty-first century, including the World Wide Web and the international news broadcasting on television through satellites, what is referred to nowadays as “new media”, has made it very easy to access the latest news anywhere in the world and at any time (Breen 2007). Moreover, news discourse, written and spoken, provides a good quality of recorded language (Bell 1991). This enables linguists to study and analyse the intended message behind the news without the interference of what Labov (1978) calls the “observer’s paradox”, i.e. when speakers are aware of their speech being recorded and observed.

Another advantage of studying news media is its similarity to ordinary speech and everyday use of language (Bell 1991). It also helps to study how news media can affect

the language, mirror the culture, and manipulate the readers into constructing certain beliefs, attitudes and opinions, i.e. social representations, towards certain events in society (section 2.4). However, in order to understand the different ideologies and social representations underlying the presentation of the news, it is necessary to study the critical linguistic approach to news discourse analysis. This approach will be presented in section 2.5. The next section will, first, focus on news construction, i.e. processes of news production and reception.

2.2 The Construction of the News

2.2.1 News Producers

It is generally regarded that the producer of a certain text, or utterance, is responsible for the thoughts expressed and the messages intended behind his/her text, or utterance (Bell 1991). However, with news production, it is difficult to identify who is responsible for the thoughts expressed and the words used. Unlike other forms of social communication, the forms and contents of the news are seldom the product of one individual. Many hands, such as writers, editors, chief reporters, printers and camera operators, contribute to moulding, modifying, shaping and producing the news with which the audience is presented (Bell 1991). Bell (1991) uses the term “newsworkers” to describe all those involved in overseeing, writing and editing the news. Drawing on Goffman’s classification (1974), Bell (1991) divides “newsworkers” into four main categories each with specific roles, namely principals, authors, editors, and animators. The principals, or news executives, are those responsible for implementing the policies of the owners of the news media institution. More specifically, principals overtly control and frame the ideologies of the news and the choice of linguistic terms and expressions, such as whom to call a “terrorist” and whom to call a “guerrilla” (Schlesinger 1987). Journalists, or authors, are those responsible for the daily writing and producing of news discourse. Editors are classified into three subcategories: chief reporter, copy editor and interpreter. The roles of chief reporters, or news editors in broadcasting, are to oversee and run the news operation day in, day out. Copy editors help to assess and modify the content and style of the news and to spot any mistakes that have been overlooked by journalists and chief reporters. The interpreters are the staff responsible for the prominence a news item receives and the way it is displayed. More specifically, they decide on type sizes, compose headlines and order news items. In other words, interpreters are the staff responsible for the manner in which the news is

presented. Finally, the animators are those who play the technical role, such as news presenters or transmitters. The news production processes become more complex with news from other parts of the world. The language of international news is edited and changed so many times by different newswriters, especially chief editors, who work for different agencies each with their own roles and policies. News production is also influenced by another aspect, namely discourse, and the roles it plays in constructing meaning, social reality, subject position and ideal readers, which are discussed next.

2.2.2 The Roles of Discourse

2.2.2.1 The Construction of Meaning and Reality

The construction of the news, spoken and written, is not merely the outcome of “newswriters” who present and modify the social values and meanings in the news, it is also a product of discourse. The notion of discourse is used here to indicate the relationship between a specific form of language use, spoken or written, and the notions of society and social relations. Kress (1989: 7) defines discourses as “systematically-organized sets of statements which give expression to the meanings and values of an institution”. Meanings and values are expressed and implemented through language, which reflects the social relations, political and economic interests of the powerful groups, elites and institutions in society. The social situations determine how people use certain words and expressions in specific places and at specific times. At the same time, discourse displays the social relations, meanings and values expressed in these social situations. Discourse also defines and delimits what is possible to say, or to do, and what is not. Kress (1989: 7) notes that:

A discourse provides a set of possible statements about a given area, and organises and gives structure to the manner in which a particular topic, object, process is to be talked about. In that it provides descriptions, rules, permissions and prohibitions of social and individual actions.

In other words, discourse constructs the meanings of texts and utterances irrespective of its producers. Discourse influences the way writers write and speakers speak. Writers and speakers do not write and speak outside the forms and meanings of a given discourse. A legal discourse, for example, is different in form, content and style from a scientific discourse or a religious discourse.

Discourse not only constructs the social meanings and values, but also constructs reality. It enforces, reinforces and implements the human experience and shapes the world which we live in (Fowler et al. 1979, Fairclough 1992 and Kress 1989). It is what Berger and Luckmann (1967) refer to as the “social construction of reality”, i.e. reality is socially constructed by social practices, such as discourse. Discourse, as such, is never neutral or value-free, but deeply implicated in constructing opinions, values and the way people perceive the world (Fowler 1991). Similarly, news discourse is not a value-free presentation of facts. Fowler (1991: 7) states that:

News is a representation of the world in language; because language is a semiotic code, it imposes a structure of values, social and economic in origin, on whatever is represented... News is a representation in this sense of construction; it is not a value-free reflection of ‘facts’.

News discourse is thus “reported from some particular angle” because it is controlled by economic and social institutions which express and implement their social meanings and values through language (Fowler 1991: 10). In his words:

Because the institutions of news reporting and presentation are socially, economically and politically situated, all news is always reported from some particular angle. The structure of the medium encodes significances which derive from the perspective positions within society of the publishing or broadcasting organizations. In fact, what is being claimed about news can equally be claimed about any representational discourse. Anything that is said or written about the world is articulated from a particular ideological position.

The news discourse in the following example (2.1), taken from the *Teshreen* online news media on Hariri’s murder investigation², illustrates the construction of meaning and reality:

2.1. The UN Secretary-General expressed his gratitude to Syria for its cooperation with the commission.

In reporting the expression of gratitude by the UN Secretary-General, the news discourse here seeks to construct a positive image of Syria and reveals the political interests of the Syrian news agency. Use of the word “cooperation” is particularly suggestive of innocence, for example.

The next section will focus on other roles of discourse, namely the construction of reading and subject positions.

² Reported on 25/09/2006, see appendix B.

2.2.2.2 Reading Position and Subject Position

Kress (1989: 49) points out that “all texts are motivated by difference”. Within any social group contradicting discourses arise from the different institutions which operate within this group, such as the capitalist economic discourse and the Christian religious discourse. News discourse, for example, arises from the current social or political conflicts and struggles between individuals or social groups (van Dijk 1998). Each social group has its own version of social reality which is defended and expressed in discourse. Every discourse is then the product of particular problems and differences and the role of discourse is to reconcile, eliminate and suppress, as far as possible, all contradictions, discrepancies and discontinuity within the domains of social practices, i.e. processes of production and consumption. In other words, discourse makes the social appear more “natural” and the problematic more “obvious”³. Kress (1989: 11) notes that “Discourses strive towards total and encompassing accounts in which contradictions are resolved or at least suppressed”. The “obviousness” and “naturalness” is emphasised by the constant and insistent repetition of the statements and demands expressed in these discourses⁴. To put it differently, the role of discourse is to create a “reading position”, i.e. a position, or role, which resolves all discursive differences, produces a plausible and coherent discourse. A “reading position” is also achieved by several strategies, such as eliminating contradicting discourses, accommodating between them, or making certain discourses dominant over others. At the same time, a “reading position” constructs and reconstructs ideal readers who are aware of the analyses of that discourse and adopt the values and views presented in it. Kress (1989) refers to this as “subject positions”.

However, discourse also imposes certain limitations on the process of reading and reconstruction or reinterpretation of meanings. A discourse which is meant as a religious sermon, for example, cannot be read as a scientific discourse or vice versa. When a discourse is used in a conventional form for a specific social occasion it is referred to as a “genre”. Kress (1988: 183) defines a genre as:

a kind of text that derives its form from the structure of a (frequently repeated) social occasion, with its characteristic participants and their purposes.

Hatim and Mason (1990: 69) also define a genre as:

³ “Naturalization” and “common sense” will be discussed later in section 2.4.2.

⁴ The repetition of linguistic terms and expressions will be focused on in the analysis of the data.

Conventionalised forms of texts which reflect the functions and goals involved in particular social occasions as well as the purposes of the participants in them... Genres may be literary or non-literary, linguistic or non-linguistic, including forms as disparate as poems, book reviews, christenings, etc.

According to Kress (1989), the formal features in a genre resist construction and reconstruction beyond a certain point. The formal features which define a news report, for example, are distinctive from editorials. Similarly, news discourse constructs subject and reading positions by addressing imagined and implied readers. Fowler (1991: 232) notes that:

Discourse always has in mind an implied addressee, an imagined subject position which it requires the addressee to occupy. Newspapers are concerned – and deliberately, despite the unnoticeability of the discursive processes – to construct ideal readers.

The construction of subject position and reading position is illustrated in the following examples from Al-Jazeera English online news⁵:

2.2. Brammertz's predecessor as chief of the investigation, Detlev Mehlis, a German, had said the killing's complexity suggested that the Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri's assassination. In one report, Mehlis had implicated Brigadier-General Assaf Shawkat, Syria's military intelligence chief and the brother-in-law of Bashar al-Assad, the Syrian president.

2.3. Al-Hariri was a quiet opponent to Syria's 30-year dominance of Lebanon. His killing provoked an international outcry and led to Syria withdrawing thousands of troops from Lebanon in April 2005. Al-Hariri supporters blamed the attack on Syria, which has denied any role.

The news discourse of Al-Jazeera here constructs a reading position, which resolves the contradictions behind the party responsible for the assassination of the Lebanese Prime Minister, Rafiq Al-Hariri. The constant repetition of statements implicating Syrian involvement makes this position appear “natural” and “obvious”, a view which is shared by the ideal or implied readers of Al-Jazeera's news discourse.

The construction of the news will be further investigated in the next section which discusses the reception, comprehension and interpretation of meanings.

⁵ Al-Jazeera's report on 26/09/2006, see appendix B.

2.2.3 The Reception of the News

The reception of the news is as important as its production. Audiences, readers and listeners, contribute to the construction of the news by comprehending and interpreting the meanings in discourse (section 2.2.3.1). They also play important roles in what Bell (1984) refers to as the “audience design” (section 2.2.3.2). The roles of the audience in news construction in relation to pragmatics and speech acts are also focused on in section 2.2.3.3.

2.2.3.1 The Audience’s Construction of Meaning

The comprehension and interpretation of discourse in general and news discourse in particular is not simply a “decoding process” of what is present in texts or utterances (Fowler 1996). Readers and listeners do not just read letters, or hear sounds, build them into words, phrases and sentences and then recognize the meanings of what is written and said. This process of discourse comprehension is referred to as “bottom-up” model (Fowler 1996). The audience is not merely restricted to “what is there” in discourse, they are powered by expectations about what they hear or read. This process is referred to as “top-down” comprehension and it runs alongside the recognition of smaller units of discourse, i.e. sounds, letters, words, phrases and sentences, in order to construct meanings. It is as Aitchison (1992: 205) puts it:

Decoding is not the simple matter it was once thought to be. People do not passively ‘register’ the sentences uttered by a speaker. Instead they hear what they expect to hear. They actively reconstruct both the sounds and syntax of an utterance in accordance with their expectations.

In other words, hearers and readers react to the linguistic features in discourse and simultaneously deploy their linguistic competence and knowledge of the world in order to construct the meanings of texts and utterances. The processing of the vast stores of knowledge about the world is known as “encyclopaedic knowledge” (Fowler 1996). Since individuals can experience different knowledge of the world, their “encyclopaedic knowledge” is bound to be different from one another. However, individuals are also social members of society who share collective views, beliefs and opinions. These collective social beliefs are known as “social representations”, or “conventional representations”. They include shared ideas, beliefs, attitudes and ideologies which are mainly expressed through discourse and language (Fowler 1996, van Dijk 1998 and

Yule 1997)⁶. Organization and packaging of these collective views and the pre-existing knowledge shared among social groups are what Fowler (1996) refers to as “schemata”.

2.2.3.2 Audience Design

The construction of news discourse is influenced by the roles audience play in what Bell (1984) calls “audience design”. The audience design framework proposes that writers/speakers modify their discourse to accommodate and primarily respond to their audience. Bell’s theory is originated from a parallel approach in sociolinguistics, called the “accommodation model” (see Giles and Powesland 1975). The “accommodation model” proposes that the linguistic choices made by the speakers/writers are primarily correlated with the attributes of their audience. This model tries to specify the motivations behind the speaker’s strategies and style shift in discourse⁷. Similarly, audience design attempts to account for the range of stylistic variation and the extent to which speakers and writers respond to their audience by modifying their style. The processes of stylistic variation which speakers/writers use within discourse is what Bell (1991) refers to as “style shift”, such as those existing in “popular”, i.e. tabloid, and “quality” news press. Bell (1984) argues that news communicators, writers and speakers, design’ their discourse to “accommodate” for and primarily respond to their audience. Communicators shift their style and choose from all levels of linguistic variations to be more like that of the person they are addressing. In other words, the strategies used by news communicators are primarily responsive. Communicators may also on occasion use other strategies to redefine their relationship with the audience and be more initiative. Bell (1984) also points out that the roles of the audience in the audience design framework rank according to the degree they are ratified, known and/or addressed by the speakers/writers. Bell (1984) classifies the audience under four potential categories, namely addressees, auditors, overhearers and eavesdroppers. The addressees are the main party of audience who is known, ratified and directly addressed by the speakers/writers. The addressees can be referred to by the grammatical second person, you. The auditors are both known and ratified but not directly addressed by the speakers/writers. Auditors can be referred to by third person pronouns, he/she/they. The third party is the overhearers who are not addressed nor ratified. However, their presence is known by the speakers/writers. Finally, the eavesdroppers are the peripheral

⁶ See section 2.4.

⁷ Linguistic choices and style shifts are discussed in section 2.3.4.

participants whose presence is not even known to the speakers/writers. Bell's hypothesis is that the extent to which speakers and writers modify their language use is affected mostly by the main party of participants, addressees, followed by auditors, then to a lesser degree by overhearers.

However, this hierarchy can be inverted according to the kind of communication or discourse genre. Bell (1984: 177) notes that "mass auditors are likely to be more important to a communicator than the immediate addressees". In news discourse, for example, the audience falls primarily under the second category, auditors. This is mainly because of the impersonal style adopted in news reporting (as will be discussed later in section 2.3.4). Auditors in news discourse are, therefore, more important to news producers than addressees. As a result, news producers have to construct their audience according to their beliefs and stereotypes about their target recipients, i.e. construct ideal readers/hearers (section 2.2.2.2). Ignorance about news audience is not a barrier to news formation. Stereotypes and beliefs about news recipients is a practical input to news producers' linguistic output (Bell 1991). News audience are treated as members of society sharing collective beliefs, rather than isolated individuals (Kress 1989). In addition to being stereotyped, audience of news discourse are also isolated. Isolation arises from the lack of direct feedback or response towards news events. According to Bell (1991), the more mass a news medium is, the greater the isolation of its audience. Nonetheless, the audience of news discourse is considered by many linguists, Kress (1989), Fowler (1991) and Bell (1991) among others, to be active agents. The audience do not passively absorb what is presented in discourse. News audience exercise their main influence by being the audience of a specific media, or newspaper, or deciding to be someone else's. News audience can choose the discourse and style which suit them better. Thus, they have the choice to accommodate their discourse (Bell 1984). The audience also contribute to the meanings of discourse by reading, or listening, and interpreting texts, or utterances, from specific angles, each according to their historical or social background. The audience adopt, negotiate or resist the reading position coded in news discourse.

The construction of meanings in discourse, i.e. processes of comprehension, interpretation and reproduction of meanings which individuals and social members use in order to make sense of discourse and the world around them, is considered to be closely related to the study of pragmatics. Pragmatics, as defined by Yule (1996: 3), is

the “study of meaning as communicated by a speaker (or writer) and interpreted by a listener (or reader). The next section will focus on an important aspect of pragmatics which is closely related to the construction of meaning and the role of the audience in the reception of news discourse.

2.2.3.3 Speech Acts

The first philosopher to investigate the ability of words to perform actions is Austin (1962). Austin proposes that when a language user produces an utterance, or a sentence, three kinds of actions are performed: locutionary, illocutionary and perlocutionary acts. The locutionary act is defined as the act of encoding a message into words, i.e. the very act of producing a meaningful sentence, or uttering an utterance. The illocutionary act is the “communicative force” which is related to the intentions the writers/speakers have when producing a sentence, i.e. whether it is produced as a promise, a threat, a warning or a demand. The perlocutionary act is the one which carries the effect of that sentence, or utterance, on readers or hearers. These three actions constitute the notion of speech acts. Many attempts have been made to classify and present a detailed framework analysis of speech acts, as in the works of Searle (1976), Traugott and Pratt (1980), Bach and Harnish (1979) and Verschueren (1985). Following Searle (1976), Traugott and Pratt (1980) propose six major categories of speech acts, each corresponds to the action a sentence can perform. These are representatives, expressives, verdictives, directives, commissives and declarations. Representative acts seek to represent a state of affairs such as telling or insisting. Expressive acts express the emotional and mental states of a writer, or speaker, such as liking or disliking. Verdictive acts seek evaluation, judgement and assessment of a situation. Directives are the ones used to influence the actions and behaviour of an audience in order to make them do things. Commissives involve a commitment on the part of the producers to do something, such as promising. And declarations are those whose production involves performing an action, such as blessing or baptising. The denotations of facts in news discourse, for example, function as representative speech acts. At the global pragmatic level, news discourse accomplishes a macro speech act, which functions primarily as assertions of the information presented in the news as a whole⁸.

⁸ Further discussion of macrostructures of news discourse will be presented in section 2.3.3.1.

However, in order for speech acts to be carried out successfully, Austin (1962) points out that relevant conditions should be maintained. These conditions are referred to as “felicity conditions” (see also Yule 1996 and Hatim and Mason 1990). “Felicity conditions” allow us to determine under what circumstances it is appropriate to ask questions, give commands and so forth. They explain that merely saying the words does not accomplish the act. Judges cannot award penalty kicks and football players cannot declare war.

Having presented speech acts in relation to news discourse, the next section will focus on another aspect in news presentations, namely the structures of the news.

2.3 The Structures of the News

Section 2.2 has presented a theoretical model of news construction which illustrates the roles of news producers, discourse and receivers in shaping the way the news is presented. The model and concepts presented in section 2.2 help to understand and interpret the different meanings, realities and values presented in news discourse. This section proposes a structural model to analyse the textual and contextual dimensions of English and Arabic news reports both at the local and global levels. The analysis of these structures and relevant concepts can reveal ideological differences in news presentations. Section 2.3.1 will introduce the textual and contextual dimensions of discourse in general. Section 2.3.2 will focus on these dimensions in English and Arabic news discourse, especially in relation to the concept of text types. Section 2.3.3 will discuss the global and local structures of news reports and introduce the concepts of global themes, macropropositions and implications. Section 2.3.4 will discuss the style of news reports and its relation to ideology.

2.3.1 Textual and Contextual Dimensions of Discourse

The notion of discourse used here refers not only to modes of language use, i.e. written or spoken, but also to language as a social practice (Fairclough 1992 and Kress 1989). In other words, language is considered as a mediator of the social and cultural conditions and consequences which are associated with the use of texts and utterances (section 2.2.2). Discourse, much like smaller units of language use, such as sentences, may exhibit abstract and general properties which can be accounted for by systematic

and rule-governed structures. These structures constitute the textual dimensions of discourse analysis and involve the description of all levels of discourse, mainly syntax, semantics and pragmatics (van Dijk 1988). In addition to the textual dimensions, discourse may exhibit individual and ad hoc properties which are variable across different contexts (van Dijk 1988). The notions of discourse and context are very much related in so far as one notion, i.e. context, contains the other, discourse. Context is defined as “the structured set of all properties of a social situation that are possibly relevant for the production, structures, interpretation and functions of text and talk” (van Dijk 1998: 211). In other words, context is the extra-discursive features which provide relevant information to understand and interpret all that comes in discourse. It is the environment which accompanies discourse and enhances its comprehensibility by readers/listeners. Knowledge about the political situation in Lebanon and the tension between the latter and its neighbouring country, Syria, for example, is necessary to comprehend a news report about the recent killings of Lebanese figures. The relationship which exists between a given situation, such as the political assassinations in Lebanon, and the kind of language used in it is what Halliday et al. (1964) terms “register”. According to them (1964: 87):

The category of register is postulated to account for what people do with their language. When we observe language activity in the various contexts in which it takes place, we find differences in the type of language selected as appropriate to different types of situation.

Register is a variety of language use which describes a given situation and constitutes one of the three dimensions of context, namely register, pragmatics and semiotics Halliday et al. (1964). Three aspects of register can be distinguished in the framework of context which is developed by Halliday et al. (1964): field, mode and tenor. Field refers to the social function of discourse, i.e. the variety of language used to constitute a given social activity. Mode refers to the medium of language use, i.e. talk or text. Tenor deals with the relationship between the addresser and the addressee. It conveys the level of formality and informality between participants in discourse. It is significant that tenor should not be seen as distinct categories of formality: rather it should be seen as a continuum ranging from formal to informal. The context-bound properties of discourse, and their different aspects, constitute the contextual dimensions necessary to analyse structures of discourse. According to van Dijk (1988), it is the contextual and textual dimensions of discourse analysis which enable the production of an explicit and systematic description of the structures of discourse. The contextual dimensions of

discourse analysis function as a link between the textual structures and the different properties of context. They relate all levels of textual description to processes of discourse understanding and interpreting, i.e. cognitive processes, and to the socio-cultural environment of discourse. Having introduced the contextual and textual dimensions necessary to describe the structures of discourse in general, the following discussion will focus text types and the textual and contextual features of news discourse in English and Arabic.

2.3.2 Textual and Contextual Dimensions of News Discourse

This section discusses the textual and contextual dimensions of news discourse in English and Arabic. Section 2.3.2.1 defines text types and presents the contextual factors which classify texts in terms of their functions. Section 2.3.2.2 discusses the textual differences between expository and argumentative news texts, i.e. reports and editorials. Section 2.3.2.3 discusses the similarities in terms of form and content between English and Arabic news texts and the syntactical differences between news reports and editorials in Arabic. Elements of discourse-shaping context within which news agencies in the Arabic-speaking and the English speaking world operate are also discussed in section 2.3.2.3.

2.3.2.1 Text Types and Contextual Factors

Many attempts have been made to define a typology of texts including those which are based on the cognitive properties of texts and their communicative functions (Reiss 1976, Biber 1989, Werlich 1976, Beaugrande and Dressler 1981 and Hatim and Mason 1990). Werlich (1976) suggests that the cognitive properties which are associated with each class of texts derive from innate biological and cognitive properties of the human mind. These functions, which include the intention to inform, to express an attitude, to persuade, to create a debate and to plan among others, constitute structural distinctions and reflect contextual organization within texts (Trosborg 1997). However, the classification of text types on the basis of an over-general notion of text functions, as noted by Hatim and Mason (1990), leads to text types such as “literary”, “poetic” and “didactic”, which are too broad to admit the possibility of a text displaying features of more than one type. A literary text, for example, can display the features of a didactic text and vice versa. Hatim and Mason (1990: 138) state that:

In reality, far too many variables are at work for such all-embracing categories to be useful. The problem is that, however the typology is set up, any real text will display features of more than one type. This **multifunctionality** is the rule rather than the exception, and any useful typology of texts will have to be able to accommodate such diversity. [Boldface in original]

In other words, the hybrid nature of texts, or “multifunctionality”, should be considered as an important property of texts which are classified according to their functions. In order to account for the multifunctionality of texts, Hatim and Mason (1990) develop a comprehensive model of context, which brings together communicative, pragmatic and semiotic values necessary for the development and understanding of texts. Drawing on Werlich’s (1976) theory, Hatim and Mason (1990: 140) define text type as “a conceptual framework which enables us to classify texts in terms of communicative intentions serving an overall rhetorical purpose”. They (1990) posit that at least four communicative intentions, or functions, can be distinguished in any given text: to claim the reader’s attention, to announce a topic, to express support for a project and to justify. The set of mutually relevant communicative intentions, referred to above, are located in text context and constitute, what Hatim and Mason term as, the rhetorical purpose, or textual strategies (Hatim and Mason 1990 and Trosborg 1997). Although more than one function is always being attended to, one predominant function, or focus, can be served at one time in a given text. To put it differently, the context determines the overall aim, purpose, and focus of any given text (Werlich 1976, Hatim and Mason 1990, Beaugrande and Dressler 1981). Werlich (1976) distinguishes five contextual factors, or foci, which correlate with five distinct categories of texts. When the focus is on the perception of factual phenomena (person, objects or relations) in the spatial context, texts are referred to as *descriptive*. When the focus is on the perception of factual and/or conceptual phenomena in the temporal context, texts are referred to as *narrative*. When the focus is on the comprehension of concepts through analysis or synthesis, texts are referred to as *expository*. When the focus is on the relations between concepts of phenomena and propositions, texts are referred to as *argumentative*. And when the focus is on the composition and planning of future behaviour, texts are referred to as *instructive* (Werlich 1976).

Drawing on Werlich’s (1976) theory of contextual factors, Hatim and Mason (1990 and 1997) classify texts into three main types⁹: exposition, argumentation and instruction.

⁹ This study will follow Hatim and Mason’s (1990) classification of texts into three main types.

Unlike Werlich (1976), who considers descriptive and narrative texts as two distinct types, Hatim and Mason (1990) consider them as variants of exposition. According to Hatim and Mason (1990), expository texts are those which seek to narrate events in relations to time, describe objects in relations to space, or conceptualise ideas in terms of decomposition (analysis) into constituents or composition (synthesis) from constituents. Argumentative texts are those in which concepts of beliefs are argued and evaluated, either explicitly or implicitly. While the focus in argumentation is always on “managing”, or steering, the situation in a way which is favourable to the goals of the text’s producer, the focus in exposition is on “monitoring the situation” and providing a reasonably detached account of events and objects (Beaugrande and Dressler 1981: 190). Argumentative texts tend to “set the tone” by displaying features as judgment, comparison, and evaluation, hence referred to by Hatim and Mason (1990) as “tone-setters”. Expository texts, on the other hand, tend to “set the scene” by expounding its aspects, hence referred to by Hatim and Mason (1990) as “scene-setters”. Finally, instructive texts are those which seek to instruct and impose, i.e. with or without option, a future behaviour, such as treaties and contracts. An instructional text type, as noted by Hatim and Mason (1997: 188), “aims at the formation of future behaviour through both monitoring and managing a situation at one and the same time”.

Hatim and Mason (1990) present a useful typology of texts which provides an insightful guide into how texts operate and function in relation to context and contextual features. In this study, Hatim and Mason’s (1990) classification of texts into three main types is considered in the analysis of news discourse.

2.3.2.2 Reports and Editorials

In news discourse, two types of texts can be distinguished: expository texts such as news reports and argumentative texts such as editorials (Hatim and Mason 1997). According to Hatim and Mason (1997: 191), a “context of detachment”, which is characterized by the use of formal, non-emotive and non-evaluative diction, predominates in expository texts, or news reports. Argumentative texts, or editorials, on the other hand, tend to be less formal and are more emotive and evaluative than expository texts. The use of emotive vocabularies, which dramatize the writers’ strong feelings and opinions, and evaluative adjectives and adverbs such as “evil”,

“fanatical”, “hideous” and “mercilessly”¹⁰ are prominent in editorials (Fowler 1991). Other distinctions can also be made between expository and argumentative news texts. On the one hand, news reports adopt an impersonal style, which is characterized by the absence of both pronouns “I” and “you” (Fowler 1991 and van Dijk 1988a). Neither the writer’s voice nor the addressee is present in news reports. Instead, third person pronouns, “he/she/it/they”, and other techniques such as passivization, pluralization and nominalization are used to project formality, objectivity and detachment in news reporting (Hatim and Mason 1990, Hodge and Kress 1993 and Fowler et al. 1979). On the other hand, editorials adopt a personal style, which is characterized by the presence of three text participants: the “source”, “I”, the “addressee”, “you”, and the “referent(s)”, “he/she/it/they” (Fowler 1991: 210). Fowler (1991: 211) states that in editorials “the source claims the authority to explain an argument and to persuade the reader of its correctness”. Editorials frequently use the pronouns “we” and “our” both in the exclusive and inclusive sense (Fowler 1991). In the exclusive or “institutional” sense, “we” refers to the newspaper (Fowler 1991). In the inclusive sense, “we” refers “to the community of values that the newspaper claims to express” (Fowler 1991: 211). The argumentative and judgemental style in editorials is also characterized by the use of modality such as “will” and “must”, which assume an authoritative position by the text writer (Fowler 1991). The authoritative position and argumentative style in editorials are also made prominent by the presence of metaphoric expressions, rhetorical questions, proverbs, rebuttal and “generic statements”, which claim to be true and offer supposedly a total knowledge of a certain subject (Fowler 1991).

Hatim (1989) and Hatim and Mason (1990) also study the relation between text types and textual thematic progression patterns, i.e. the order of sentence elements in a text¹¹. They (1990: 218) note that “Thematic progression relates the way themes and rhemes concatenate within a text to the hierarchic organization of the text and ultimately to rhetorical purpose”. The organization of sentence elements in a text serves an overall rhetorical purpose which can be related to a specific text type. Hatim and Mason (1990) suggest that expository texts are compatible with continuous Theme patterns, which relay non-evaluativeness and detachment. Argumentative texts, on the other hand, are compatible with emerging simple linear progression patterns - or what they describe as “zig-zag” patterns - which relay elements of evaluativeness. To put it differently,

¹⁰ Examples are given by Fowler (1991: 210- 211).

¹¹ See section 3.3.4 for a detailed discussion of thematic progression patterns.

continuous Themes predominate in news reports, whereas “zig-zag” patterns predominate in editorials.

However, as discussed in section 2.3.2.1, text types are not always clear cut, as two or more types can overlap in a given text. In news reports, the dominant contextual focus is always on the narration of political events and actions, whereas in editorials it is always on the evaluation of relations between concepts. Nevertheless, evaluative elements may also be present to a certain degree in news reports, e.g. through the use of fairly emotive and semi-formal diction. These elements are nonetheless “bound to remain subsidiary if the narration is not to drift into argumentation” (Hatim and Mason 1990: 146). The hybrid nature of texts can give rise to ideological expressions especially when “one text type is used to mask the rhetorical purpose of another” (Hatim and Mason 1990: 164). News reports, for example, are expected to relay the facts as they are, whereas editorials are expected to debate issues and evaluate concepts. However, contentious issues can be argued in news reports through seemingly detached exposition. Hybridization in this particular case is ideological. In this study, the relation between the choice and order of sentence elements and the rhetorical functions of texts is one of the methodological tools used to detect underlying ideologies in the selected English and Arabic data. The similarities and differences between English and Arabic news media texts will be the focus of the next section.

2.3.2.3 News Discourse in English and Arabic

The characteristics which distinguish expository news texts, reports, from argumentative, editorials, in English are similar in terms of form and content (structure and style) to those in Arabic (Mellor 2005, Khalil 2000 and Rugh 1987). Like English, Arabic news reports are detached, formal and impersonal, whereas Arabic editorials are subjective, informal and personal. In terms of form, the “inverted pyramid structure” (haram maqlwp¹²) is used in both Arabic and English news reports (Mellor 2005 and Abu Zeid 1993). The “inverted pyramid structure” consists of two parts, the introduction and the body. The introduction includes the headline and the lead paragraph, which summarize the main event and its consequences. The body includes

¹² This thesis uses the Qalam system to transliterate Arabic into English. This is particularly useful when an Arabic word such as *munaahid* or particles such as *qad* and *inna* have no equivalent in English and their analysis may affect the meaning of the text.

the rest of the news text and presents details starting from the most important towards the least important. This structure is illustrated in Figure 2.1.

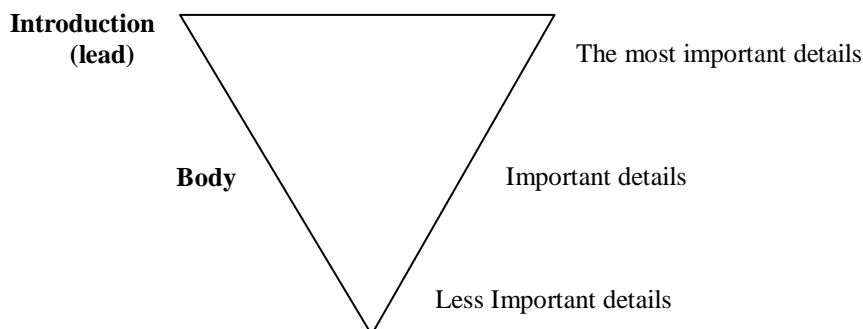


Figure 2.1 Inverted Pyramid Structure¹³

This structure helps busy readers to skim quickly through the text without missing on the most important information, which is presented in the summary or lead paragraph (Mellor 2005). According to Mellor (2005) and Abu Zeid (1993), news reports use the “inverted pyramid structure” as a marker of the newspaper’s objectivity. Other structures such as the “upright pyramid” - where the news text begins with the least important details and ends with the most important information – are used in editorials to mark the difference between news and “views” (Mellor 2005 and Abu Zeid 1993). According to van Dijk (1993), the structures of editorials can be divided into three sections, which contain argument: the introduction, the intermediate section and the coda. The introduction presents the event and its critical state. The intermediate section presents the consequences and analysis of the event and contains reasons, evidence and solutions. The coda presents the conclusion and contains the moral of the argument.

In terms of content, modality and emotive diction are generally avoided in English and Arabic news reports, whereas frequently used in English and Arabic editorials (Mellor 2005 and Khalil 2000). Arabic editorials, for example, use the attitudinal particle *inna*, meaning “certainly” or “truly”, to express modality and emphasise the truth value of a proposition (Khalil 2000). This particle would be absent in Arabic news reports. Khalil (2000: 167) notes that:

The presentative particle *inna*...carries the rhetorical function of impressing or convincing. By serving an emphatic function, *inna* [his italics] signals the involvement of the writer in the meaning expressed in the sentence that it prefaces.

¹³ Adopted from Mellor (2005: 128).

Similarly, the particle *lakin*, meaning “but”, which introduces an opposition, does not appear in Arabic news reports, but appears frequently in Arabic editorials (Khalil 2000). Based on his observation and analysis, Khalil (2000) concludes that there are certain sentence-initial markers which occur frequently in Arabic news reports, but are less frequent in Arabic editorials such as:

*qad, kaana qad, fa, min jihatini 'ukhra, min alma'rufi anna, and fi nafsi alwaqt*¹⁴

These markers can be translated as *already/rather, was already/rather, on the other hand, it is known that* and *at the same time*, respectively¹⁵. Khalil (2000) also lists the following emphatic and argumentative particles which occur frequently in Arabic editorials, but are less frequent in news reports:

fa inna, fa laqad, fa hatha, and fa huwa/hiya

These particles can be translated as *it is true, it is already, it is this, it is he and it is she*¹⁶. Khalil (2000) also points out that even conjunctions such as *kama* (also/in addition) and *wa* (and) are not as frequent in Arabic editorials as they are in Arabic news reports. In his sample, which consists of at least a hundred issues of *Al-Ahram* newspaper, only six instances of *kama* were identified in sentence-initial positions in Arabic editorials¹⁷.

Naturally, syntactic differences between the languages arise. English is a noun-initial language, whereas Arabic is a verb-initial language. Arabic uses different sentence types, Verbal or Nominal, to indicate different text types and text functions (Hatim 1989). Hatim (1989: 144) notes that:

Our conclusions point to the fact that the choice [between Verbal and Nominal sentence types in Arabic] is ultimately related to text-type. The verbal clause structure tends to predominate in non-evaluative, expository texts, while the Nominal structure is typically of evaluative, argumentative texts.

The function of Nominal sentences in Arabic is to present a proposition and describe people and objects, whereas the function of Verbal sentences is to relate events. News reports in Arabic are, thus, almost always verb-initial, whereas editorials are mainly noun-initial (Abdul-Raof 1998, Khalil 2000, Hatim 1989, Parkinson 1981 and Wright

¹⁴ The Qalam system is used for the transliteration of the above markers and particles. Markers such as *qad, laqad* and *inna* are inherent to Arabic and have no equivalent in English.

¹⁵ The researcher's translation.

¹⁶ The researcher's translation.

¹⁷ Halliday (2004) uses the term textual Themes to describe such conjunctions.

1974). The use of Nominal sentences is also a characteristic feature of Arabic news headlines. Arabic news headlines use present tense and nominal sentences, as in the following example:

2.5. ¹⁸ آلاف اللبنانيين يتدفقون للمشاركة في تشييع بيار الجميل

Thousands of Lebanese mourn Gemayel.

The use of noun-initial sentences in Arabic news headlines helps to place an emphasis on the Subject, “thousands of Lebanese” in example 2.5, by making it more prominent than other elements in the headlines (Cantarino 1974 and Keenan and Schieffelin 1976). The use of present tense in news headlines adds immediacy to the reported event and makes it appear actual (Mellor 2005). English news headlines are also characterized by the use of present tense, but omit articles and auxiliaries (Mardh 1980 and Mellor 2000), as in the following examples:

2.6. U.N.: New leads in Hariri probe¹⁹.

2.7. Lebanon prepares to lay to rest slain minister²⁰.

In terms of elements of discourse-shaping context, i.e. the history of the public sphere in different cultures, the profile of the readership (literacy and circulation) and the presence of censorship, strong similarities are found between Arabic and English news media texts (Mellor 2005, Khalil 2000, Rugh 1987 and van Dijk 1988b). In spite of the fact that there are eighteen Arab countries, which are independent sovereign entities, they all share a common language and culture (Rugh 1987). Rugh (1987: 20) notes that the Arabic language, which is “inseparable from Arab culture, history, tradition and Islam, the religion of the vast majority of Arabs”, communicates and reinforces the Arab cultural identity. The Arabic language, also referred to as Modern Standard Arabic (MSA), is the language used by all Arabic news media. Therefore, educated Arabs from different countries and Arabic speakers can read and understand news media texts from different sources. Rugh (1987: 22) states that:

The Arabic language used in newspapers throughout the Arab world is a modified and somewhat modernized form of “classical” or literary Arabic which is universally understood by educated Arabs. Moroccans and Saudis and Lebanese [sic] who can read Arabic are able to read each others’ newspapers just as they can all read the Koran, the highest authority for classical Arabic.

¹⁸ Reuters Arabic news headline on 1/23/11/2006.

¹⁹ CNN English news headline on 25/09/2006.

²⁰ AFP1 English news headline on 23/11/2006.

In his analysis of the international news coverage of the assassination of Bashir Gemayel, a Lebanese politician and father of Pierre Gemayel²¹, in September 1982, van Dijk (1988b) states that the Third World press is economically dependent on news materials from Western-based international news agencies. In his words (1988b: 33):

Essentially the Third World countries observed that global information and communication is controlled by a few Western-based international agencies and media multinationals, which also have the important technological knowledge and experience. This economic hegemony was found to be tightly interwoven with cultural dominance, resulting in a fundamental imbalance in the international news flow and the dependence on Western media products (e.g. magazines, comics, movies or TV programs).

He (1988: 62) also states that:

The Third World press borrows much more of its stories from the international press agencies, especially AP, Reuters and AFP, whereas the First World newspapers have more correspondents or news services at their disposal.

Journalism in the Arab world is not only dependent on materials provided by the Western world, but also on their education. Mellor (2005: 3) explains that:

Professionally, a new generation of western-trained and -educated Arab journalists has emerged and has occupied the leading positions in the newly established media outlets. In their attempt to modernize both their profession and their media output, both journalists and media institutions alike seek their inspiration from the developed world, particularly the United States. Also journalism and media education in the Arab world usually adopt materials translated from English, due in part to the lack of locally produced materials and theories.

The similarities between Arabic and English news media in terms of form and content are, thus, due to the professional level of the new generation of journalists, who are educated in and inspired by the West. In this study, the Arabic news texts which are selected for analysis are collected from online mainstream news media sources, which are popular among Arabs and Arabic speakers, have wide circularity and address local and global issues. The selected Arabic news media, with the exception of the NBN and *Teshreen/Syria Times*, are independent news agencies, which are not governed by the state (see section 4.2). State-owned publications are often suspected of employing censorship, but neither the NBN nor *Teshreen/Syria Times* make any explicit statement on whether these publications are censored in any way. Censorship – by virtue of being the absence of information - cannot affect or shape the context, form or style of Arabic news discourse. However, it may reflect ideological representations in the media which

²¹ Pierre Gemayel was also assassinated in November 2006. The online news coverage of his assassination is part of the data analysed in this study.

seek to rule by hegemony and consensus (see section 2.4.3). This study examines whether the choice and order of the thematic and rhematic elements in news texts can detect ideologies. The English and Arabic texts which are selected for analysis are of the expository type, i.e. news reports. Practical reasons are involved in this choice as most - if not all - of the available texts from Arabic and English mainstream online news media sources are expository. Editorials in English and Arabic from these sources are rare and would be insufficient to conduct a comparative analysis and draw generalizable conclusions. Having identified the type of news texts selected for data analysis, the following section will focus on the description of the structures of news reports both at the global and local levels of discourse.

2.3.3 Global and Local Structures of News Reports

The textual structures of news reports do not merely involve the descriptions of isolated sentences in terms of levels of syntax, semantics and pragmatics. The descriptions of sentence grammatical aspects, such as thematization and nominalization (section 4.5), sentence meanings, such as propositions, presuppositions and implications (section 2.3.3.2), and sentence actions (section 2.2.3.3) account only for microlevel structures of news reports. A comprehensive description of the structures of news reports should also account for both the macro and micro levels (van Dijk 1988). At the macro, or global, semantic levels - also referred to as the semantic macrostructures - news reports display global topics, or global themes, and macropropositions, which describe the meanings of whole paragraphs, sections or chapters. The semantic macrostructures will be discussed in section 2.3.3.1. At the global syntactic levels, news reports display certain organizational patterns and categories. These categories are called news schemata and are described by the superstructures of news discourse. A schema is defined as a system of rules which consists of specific and conventionalized macro-structure categories ordered hierarchically in discourse (van Dijk 1988). News reports consist of at least two obligatory schematic categories: Summary and Episode (Bell 1991 and van Dijk 1988). A Summary is expressed by headlines and lead paragraphs, which are also part of the semantic macrostructure. An Episode introduces the main events of the news and their historical background. These categories have specific orders, i.e. the headline comes first on the top of the text followed by the lead paragraph then by the Episode (section 2.3.2.3). At the global pragmatic levels, news reports accomplish a macrospeech act, which functions primarily as macroassertions of the information

presented in the news as a whole (see section 2.2.3.3). The micro- and macro-level structures of news reports analysis are interrelated in so far as the forms, meanings and actions of the whole text are derived from the local forms, meanings and actions of the smaller units of language use, i.e. words and sentences.

The following section will discuss the macrostructures of news reports and relevant notions of topics, propositions and macropropositions.

2.3.3.1 Macrostructures: Topics, Macropropositions and News Headlines

The macrostructures of discourse are characterized in terms of global properties of meaning and content, namely a topic and macropropositions. The global meaning of discourse should be distinguished from the meanings of individual words and sentences. In other words, a distinction should be made between a topic at the local level of the clause and a topic at the global level of discourse. A local topic, also known as Theme, is defined as elements which occupy first position in a sentence or a clause (Halliday 2004)²². A topic of discourse, or a global theme, is the overall meaning of discourse or what discourse is globally about (van Dijk 1988)²³. It is the summary, gist, or the most important information which is delivered in large stretches of text, or talk. The macrostructures of news discourse are concerned with a global topic, which is usually expressed by the headline or the lead, first, paragraph, which acts as a summary of the news events (van Dijk 1988). It has been argued, however, that the main topics of news discourse are not always expressed in headlines (Reah 2002, Fairclough 1992 and Van Dijk 1988). News headlines, as Reah (2002: 15) points out: “are of limited use in giving a clear overview on the news of the day, or the relative importance of the items.” Words which carry strong emotional connotations are selected in news headlines in order to attract the attention of the readers.

Macrostructures, like local-level semantics, are also characterized in terms of propositions. A proposition is defined as the smallest unit of meaning constructs which are used to denote facts (van Dijk 1988). One concept alone, such as “John”, cannot express a proposition, as it cannot be true or false. But, two or more concepts, such as “John is a politician”, can express a proposition. A proposition is, thus, typically

²² Discussions of Halliday’s approach to Theme and Rheme will be presented in Chapter 3.

²³ To avoid confusion, the term “Theme” will be used in this study to refer to the local-level topic, whereas, the term “topic” will be used to refer to the global-level one.

expressed by a simple clause, or sentence, which has a predicate, such as “is a politician”, and one or more “arguments”, i.e. concepts which denote persons, things, or events. A sentence may also contain two or more propositions, such as:

2.8. John, who is a politician, has travelled to Hong Kong to attend a meeting.

The sentence in example 2.8 has four arguments, “John”, “politician”, “Hong Kong” and “meeting”, and two predicates, “is a politician” and “travelled to Hong Kong”. Thus, it contains two propositions. The denotation of facts expressed through propositions seems more relevant in sentences performing representative speech acts, i.e. statements and assertions (section 2.2.3.3), such as those expressed in news reports. However, other actions, such as commissives and directives, may also express truth values, for example whereas threats and promises may involve future facts, accusations may involve past facts. Unlike micro-level propositions, which are directly expressed by clauses and sentences, macropropositions are indirectly expressed by larger stretches of text, or talk. It is assumed that each topic of discourse has a macroproposition (van Dijk 1988). Thus, large discourses, which contain more than one topic, have more than one macroproposition. Macropropositions are organized in a hierarchical order, i.e. each macroproposition (M^1) can be subsumed under another macroproposition (M^2). The hierarchical relations between macropropositions are the “macrorules” which readers intuitively use to understand and summarize the main concepts presented in discourse (van Dijk 1988). To put it differently, topics are derived from macropropositions, or the meanings of discourse, by summarizing the “macrorules” which reduce information and organize macropropositions in terms of hierarchy and relevance. Three major “macrorules” operate to reduce discourse to its main topics, deletion, generalization and construction. The first reduction process operates by deleting irrelevant information. The second replaces sequences of propositions which share similar characteristics by one generalization, for example cats, dogs and birds can be subsumed under pets. The third constructs the conditions and consequences of an event or act by denoting the act, or event, as a whole, for example going to the airport, checking in and walking to the gate can be subsumed under “taking a plane”. In news discourse, the macrorules which organize macropropositions is further defined by relevance, top-down and instalments. According to van Dijk (1988: 43), the topical, or global thematic, structure of news discourse is realized by a “top-down principle of relevance organization”. Van Dijk (1988: 43) notes that:

This principle says that news discourse is organized so that the most important information or relevant information is put in the most prominent position, both in the text as a whole, and in the sentence. This means that for each topic the most important information is presented first.

The macrorules which organize the macropropositions of news discourse are determined by relevance of topics rather than by logical order, i.e. high-level events and participants are introduced first. At the local level of the clause, this entails a left-right process whereby high-level information comes in left position. In other words, Themes are considered as more important than other elements in the clause. At the global level of discourse, this entails a top-down process whereby essential information comes first in the text followed by less-essential details. Topics of news discourse are also realized by instalments. They are delivered in parts rather than as a whole. More specifically, high-level specifics come first followed by low-level details of time, location and consequences. This process is particularly important when assigning Given or New information to sentence elements (see section 3.3.2). Information which occurs in sentence-initial positions, news headlines or lead paragraphs is presented by the news producers as New or important. Background or least important information is presented last.

However, the principle of relevance organization of news discourse may not be objective. Van Dijk and Kintsch (1983) argue that different language users may interpret discourse differently and infer different topics depending on what information they consider more, or less, relevant. They may have slightly different summaries of the same discourse. Topics of news discourse, which are usually signalled by headlines or leads, are macro-structured from the point of view of the newspaper and the newswriters. Readers, or listeners, of the news may assign different macropropositions and relevancies to news events, which may not necessarily be the same as those signalled by the news discourse (Chomsky 1981). Reah (2002) also emphasises that all news events and their description in discourse are presented in a particular way which necessarily embody a point of view. Similarly, the link between the selection and presentation of headlines, news discourse, point of view and ideology are emphasised by Fairclough (1992: 161)²⁴. In his words:

Surely, though headlines are merely a particularly obvious instance of a general tendency in media discourse. Newspapers tend to offer sometimes contending

²⁴ News headlines and global themes are of major interest to the analysis of the selected news reports especially in relation to the study of ideology and point of view, see Chapters 3 and 5.

(though often harmonizing) versions of the truth, each of which is based upon the implicit and indefensible claim that events can be transparently and categorically represented, and perspective can be universalized. This myth underpins the ideological work of the media: offering images of and categories for reality, positioning and shaping social subjects, and contributing for the most part to social control and reproduction.

Ideological presentations in news headlines are illustrated in the following examples from the data (see appendix E):

2.9. Beirut holds funeral for slain MP. (Al-Jazeera English)

2.10. Anti-Syrian MP mourned in Lebanon (BBC English)

2.11. Damascus condemns the crime and doubts its timing. (*Alarab* Arabic)

The global theme of the news reports here is the assassination of the Lebanese MP, Walid Eido. The way the news is presented in the headlines reveals different angles of telling the story. Al-Jazeera, for example, focuses on Eido's funeral in Beirut and describes his death by choosing a strong emotional word, "slain". The BBC focuses on his political background - Eido is known for his opposition to Syria's interference with Lebanon – and places the term "anti-Syrian" in sentence-initial position. The BBC news headline immediately establishes a link between the assassination and Eido's political views. The focus of the *Alarab* news headline is neither on the assassination of Eido nor on his political views, rather it is on Damascus and its condemnation of the crime. The presentation of information in these news headlines indicates different ideologies underlying each report.

Schank and Abelson (1977) stress that the macrorules are derived not only from our personal beliefs and interests, but also from our knowledge of the world. In order to be able to delete irrelevant information, generalize cats and dogs as pets, or construct a whole event, language users should know all the components and details of the macro-event and have cognitive representations and abilities to summarize discourse. In news discourse, readers need to apply their general and particular political knowledge to summarize the macropropositions and understand the ideologies presented in the news. The roles of global themes, macropropositions and news headlines in detecting underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports will be investigated in the data analysis (section 5.1).

2.3.3.2 Microstructures: Presuppositions and Implications

Most information, knowledge and beliefs necessary to understand and interpret meanings in discourse are socially shared between language users and members of society. These information and beliefs are cognitively represented and can remain implicit, or presupposed, by language users in discourse (van Dijk 1988). They can also be grammatically signalled, such as by the use of the definite article, “the”. When speakers/writers, for example, use expressions like “the man”, “the queen”, or “the moon”, they assume that the listeners know which “man”, “queen” or “moon” they are talking about. The reason is the speakers/writers have mentioned the “man” or the “queen” before, or the concepts themselves are unique, i.e. there is only one moon or one queen that the speaker can be talking about. In semantics, this concept is referred to as “presupposition” (Kempson 1975, Wilson 1975 and Petöfi and Franck 1973). A presupposition is defined as propositions which are assumed by the speaker to be known to the listener, on the basis of including all relevant information and shared knowledge. A presupposition is thus a proposition that is inferred by what is and what is not in a sentence (Fairclough 1995, Levinson 1983, Yule 1996, Reah 2002 and Van Dijk 1988; 1998). Some presuppositions are closely tied to word meanings and others to grammatical signals, as in “even Sarah left the party”. The presupposition which is implied in the latter example suggests that Sarah was not expected to leave the party.

The term presupposition involves two other concepts, entailment, also known as implication, and implicature²⁵. Implications are defined as propositions which are included and contained within other propositions (Anderson and Belnap 1975). In other words, when a proposition (A) implies another proposition (B), this means that when the facts denoted by (A) are true (B) is also true. A sentence such as “Blair was the Prime Minister”, for example, entails, or strongly infers, that “Blair” was also a politician; the meaning of “politician” is included within “Prime Minister”. However, the relations between propositions may not always be strong, as in the previous sentence. Some propositions can be safely inferred, simply because they are general shared knowledge between language users, or members of society. Other implications are weaker and more subjective. Weak implications are referred to as “implicature”, “suggestions” or “associations” (van Dijk 1988). They refer to information which is not

²⁵ Implicature is a form of inference, which Baker (1992: 223) defines as “what the speaker means or implies rather than what s/he says”. This concept was first introduced by Paul Grice (1975), who describes a set of rules or ‘maxims’ which operate in normal cooperative conversation.

explicitly present in a text. Unlike implications, or entailments, suggestions are not based on general shared knowledge, but rather on particular beliefs and opinions and specific knowledge of the situation. The use of the term “anti-Syria”, for example, to describe Lebanese politicians who rejected the Syrian policy in Lebanon and were then assassinated have stronger implications of negativity and hatred towards Syria than a term such as a “critic of Syria”. The readers of these news reports apply their knowledge about the particular political situation in Lebanon and the tension between the two countries in order to infer meanings and understand the cause of these assassinations. In other words, the readers are more likely to draw an association between the use of “anti-Syria” and the involvement of the Syrian government in the killings of these Lebanese figures than the use of a “critic of Syria”. Generally speaking, all implied or presupposed propositions which are not directly or explicitly expressed in discourse are implicit information (van Dijk 1988). Much like other types of discourse, news leaves many things unsaid. The inferences made by readers to comprehend and interpret the news are realized by the taken-for-granted information and the presupposed knowledge of the political background of the particular news events. The lexical choices made by newsmakers and the semantic implications presented in news discourse are not arbitrary. They involve evaluations based on the views and ideologies of the reporters and news producers (ideology will be discussed in section 2.4). The study of presuppositions and implications are considered essential to understand and interpret meanings particularly in news discourse. At the same time, inferences, whether weak or strong, serve as ideological tools to analyse the language of the news, as will be shown in sections 5.3 and 5.4.

2.3.4 News Style and Ideology

Style, or stylistics, is variations of language use which are determined by the personal and social properties of language users and language use. Van Dijk (1988: 27) defines style as:

Style is the result of the choices made by the speaker among optional variations in discourse forms that may be used to express more or less the same meaning (or denoting the same referent).

A given meaning can be expressed differently by various sentence patterns and words. The social and cultural context of situation, also, determines the variation of language use in a specific event. A conversation between friends, for example, tends to be

informal, whereas a political speech, or a religious sermon, tends to be formal. The different choices made by language users can be lexical, such as the use of “doctor” instead of “physician”, or syntactic, such as the choice between a passive or an active structure to describe the same event. Such variations are not arbitrary. According to Fowler et al. (1979: 1):

Different styles of speech and writings express contrasting analyses and assessments in specific areas of experience: not total world-views, but specialized systems of ideas relevant to events such as political demonstrations, to processes such as employment and bargaining, to objects such as material possessions and physical environment.

The various choices of words and constructions indicate specific points of view which are relevant to that social situation. In other words, linguistic variations implicate ideologies. Styles are also indicators of the function of discourse and the context in which it occurs. Simpson (2004: 2) notes that:

Stylistics is a method of textual interpretation in which primacy of place is assigned to *language* [italics in original]. The reason why language is so important to stylisticians is because the various forms, patterns and levels that constitute linguistic structure are an important index of the function of the text. The text’s functional significance as discourse acts in turn as a gateway to its interpretation.

The study of style and the different textual, pragmatic and linguistic features, i.e. the lexical and syntactic options, in a given discourse contribute to understanding, exploring and interpreting the meanings and ideologies of that discourse²⁶.

Although news discourses may differ in style, according to types of news media, culture or society, they share certain stylistic features (van Dijk 1988, Bell 1991 and Fowler 1991). Firstly, news reports are characterized by distance. The pronoun “you” is generally absent in a news report, except in quotations, feature articles or editorials. Readers of news reports are implicitly and indirectly addressed (see section 2.2.3). Secondly, news reports are impersonal. The production of the news is not the outcome of individuals, but institutionalized organizations, as was discussed in section 2.2.1. The personal pronoun “I” is absent because news reports are not about personal experiences but about impersonal statements of facts. The impersonal style of news reports is achieved by using certain strategies, such as the third person addressee, pluralisation, nominalization and passivization²⁷. Nominal expressions, such as “cooperation” and “killing”, can be used, for example, to replace verbal clauses, such as

²⁶ Stylistic variations will be investigated in Chapter 5.

²⁷ Nominalization and thematization will be discussed in section 4.5.2.

“Syria cooperated with the UN team” and “a suicide bomber killed Hariri”, respectively²⁸. Passivization is the process of turning an active sentence into a passive one. In English, most passive sentences are agentless (Hodge and Kress 1993)²⁹. Once the agent is deleted and is no longer the focus of the sentence, the agent or the cause of the action becomes unclear. Passivization leaves the attributions of causality and responsibility unclear, “mystified” or “obfuscated” (Hodge and Kress 1993). Although the impersonal style of news reports helps journalists to present “impartial” and “objective” views in the news, it is considered an exercise of power from the part of news producers. Fowler et al. (1979: 38) note:

Three points need to be made about the power-relationship expressed through the text. First, by adopting a familiar bureaucratic style of “impersonality” (ready-made and available generally for official institutions in our society...) those people who were responsible for publishing the text have obscured the fact that they intended to control the behaviour of the people to whom the text is addressed. Second, there is a degree of over-kill here. The writer of the document is absolutely unidentifiable, and the addressees are absolutely depersonalized... Third, not only is the nature of the communicative relationship obscured or mystified by the way language is used, so also is the content which is being communicated.

The use of the impersonal style objectifies, depersonalizes and dehumanizes people by turning them into objects. It is an indication of control and manipulation (as will be discussed in section 2.4). Thirdly, news reports are characterized by formality. This style is frequently embedded with long and complex sentences and selected lexical registers³⁰ featuring technical words, jargon, and in general the language of the elite, or news owners (van Dijk 1988). It is full of relative clauses packed with information and propositions condensed to nominalization (van Dijk 1988). It is also full of new coinages and new words which denote new developments of news events. Finally, news reports have a conversational and habitual style which allows unnoticed expressions of shared thoughts and opinions (Fowler 1991). It assumes a consensus between news producers and readers concerning particular world views and a subjective reality which does not need to be proven. This means that a considerable amount of shared knowledge, beliefs and values must be taken for granted and presupposed in news reports. The job of the journalist is to “neutralize” and “habitualize” the language of the news and present it to readers as common sense. Fowler (1991: 57) notes that:

²⁸ Examples are from the data.

²⁹ In a sentence such as “two Palestinians were killed by Israeli soldiers”, the agent of the passive structure is “Israeli soldiers”.

³⁰ Register is a variety of language use which describes a given situation, see definition in section 2.3.1.

The reasons for adopting a conversational style have partly to do with the construction of an illusion of informality, familiarity, friendliness. But there is a more important ideological reason. The ideological function of conversation is to naturalize the terms in which reality is represented, and the categories those terms represent.

In other words, news has to be lively, offer entertainment and disguise the fact it is a form of institutionalized discourse. The conversational style of the news creates an illusion of familiarity and narrows the gap between the news media and its institution, on the one hand, and the news discourse and its readers on the other. The study of ideology in the news and the notions of naturalization, common sense, persuasion and media control will be discussed in the next section.

2.4 Ideologies in the News: A Socio-Cognitive Approach

The aim of this section is to present an ideological framework within which the ideological content of news media reports can be investigated. This section identifies and explores the important social and cognitive layers and concepts of ideologies which underlie the production and construction of news media discourse. The proposed ideological framework will be applied to the data analysis to help explore the context of news media reports which decides the audience's preferred readings and interpretations of political events. The data which are selected for analysis focus on a major political event in the Middle East spanning the years 2005 to 2007, namely the assassinations of political Lebanese politicians and the implication of Syria's involvement in these assassinations. The main purpose of the analysis is to investigate the ideological representations regarding the way Syria is presented in mainstream online news media reports. More specifically, this study investigates the choices and orders of sentence elements, Theme and Rheme, in revealing underlying ideologies in English and Arabic news reports. The chosen media outlets represent popular online news sources which aim at objective news presentations and address wide population of educated English and Arabic readers. Section 2.4.1 defines the concept of ideology and proposes a socio-cognitive approach relating cognition, society and discourse. Relevant notions of consciousness and common sense are discussed in section 2.4.2. Section 2.4.3 presents the relation between the exercise of power, control and persuasion, on the one hand, and the different discursive and social practices, on the other hand.

2.4.1 A Multidisciplinary Theory of Ideology

A vast majority of works on ideologies pay extensive attention to the social, political, economic and cultural dimensions of ideology and relations of power and domination in society. Very few works have focused on ideology as an interface between social structure and social cognition. Among these works are Hall (1996) and van Dijk (1998). Hall (1996: 26) defines ideology as:

The mental frameworks – the languages, the concepts, categories, imagery of thought, and the systems of representation – which different classes and social groups deploy in order to make sense of, figure out and render intelligible the way society works.

According to Hall (1996), ideology is a framework of mental and “social representations”, i.e. ideas, beliefs and attitudes which are shared collectively by members of society. In his definition, Hall (1996) notes that the role of ideology is to make sense of the social relations, practices and structures, i.e. classes, institutions and organizations, of society. Ideology also serves to stabilize society by particular forms of power and dominance. In other words, Hall (1996)’s concept of ideology reflects the cognitive dimension, i.e. thoughts, ideas and beliefs, and the social dimension, i.e. social groups and power relations in society. Hall’s work was further developed by van Dijk (1998)’s multidisciplinary approach to ideology. Van Dijk (1998) defines ideologies as social beliefs which are shared by members of society. More specifically, van Dijk (1998) locates ideology in a triangle which relates cognition, society and discourse. In his words (1998: 9):

Ideologies are not merely defined in cognitive terms, but also in terms of social groups, group relations, institutions, at the macro-level and in terms of social practices at the micro-level.

In other words, there are three levels of ideology. The cognitive level involves “social representations”, namely socially shared beliefs, values, attitudes and opinions³¹. Examples of “social representations” are religious beliefs, communism, feminism and racism. Notions which are associated with the cognitive and mental functions of ideology include truth, falsity, (false) consciousness and common sense. The social level, or the macro-level, of ideology involves the social structures of society, namely social groups, group relations, classes, institutions and organizations, such as school, church or news media. The social functions of ideology include power, control,

³¹ Van Dijk (1998) prefers the term ‘beliefs’ to ‘ideas’, since beliefs can be true or false, whereas ideas are normally associated with new thoughts or knowledge.

hegemony, inculcation, and imposition. The discursive level, or the micro-level, of ideology involves language use, or discourse, among other forms of interpersonal interactions, i.e. discursive practices. According to van Dijk (1998), ideology does not only stabilize society, as noted above by Hall (1996), but also regulates social practices, and legitimate, or conceal, relations of power and dominance. This function is primarily manifested in discourse. Discursive practices among others, express, produce and reproduce ideologies through the use of language. The construction or change of ideologies can also be achieved by social practices, i.e. social actors and members of society actively participating in constructing or opposing certain ideologies. Following van Dijk (1998), the concept of ideology adopted here is defined by its three levels of cognition, society and discourse. Ideological representations refer to the socially shared beliefs, values and opinions which are expressed at the textual, structural and linguistic levels of discourse analysis. More specifically, this study aims at investigating the linguistic choices and organization of Theme/Rheme elements in elucidating underlying ideologies regarding the way Syria is presented in the selected news media reports. The cognitive and social aspects of ideology are further discussed in section 2.4.2. Concepts which are associated with the discursive functions of ideologies such as persuasion, manipulation, legitimation and concealment are discussed in section 2.4.3.

2.4.2 False Consciousness and Common Sense

The concept of ideology as “false consciousness” has been associated with Marx and Engels’ (1970) conception of truth and falsity of beliefs. The term “false” is assigned two meanings: misguided factual beliefs and evaluative beliefs (van Dijk 1998). Misguided factual beliefs indicate wrong, partial and biased information, in contrast with true information and facts. Evaluative beliefs are those which entail attitudes, opinions and social practices which are not necessarily in the interest of the dominated group. “Consciousness” indicates that ideologies can be either explicit, i.e. in the consciousness of social members of society, or implicit. In other words, social members of society are either aware of the ideologies which they have or not. According to van Dijk (1998), ideological self-awareness has been frequently observed to be rare. Social members of society are barely aware of the social representations which they have and which control their evaluations, attitudes and social practices. Thus, ideology as “false consciousness” implies that the social representations of the powerful, elite, or dominant group are accepted, or even adopted, by the dominated group. It signifies that the

dominated group may be ignorant, indifferent, or have misguided beliefs about the material conditions of its existence and the social factors, policies and arrangements concerning its own interest (van Dijk 1998). It can also signify oppression, manipulation, or inculcation by the dominant and powerful group in society. Ideological inculcation is possible when there is no clash of immediate interests between the dominant and dominated groups. It is also possible when the dominant group controls and manages information, so that there are no alternative sources of knowledge and opinions available for the dominated group (Robins et al. 1987).

Ideologies “as false consciousness” are very influential when the dominated group is unable to distinguish their own goals, interests and attitudes from those of the dominant group. Ideologies become part of everyday life and everyday social practice and experience to the degree that people will not realize that they have them. Hence, ideologies become “common-sense” assumptions and “taken-for-granted” beliefs (Fowler 1996a, Fairclough 1985, Simpson 1993 and van Dijk 1998). Fairclough (1985; 1992) refers to this process as “naturalization”. He (1985: 751) notes that: “naturalization gives to particular ideological representations the status of common sense, and thereby makes them opaque, i.e. no longer visible as ideologies”. Simpson (1993: 6) also defines “naturalization” as:

the way dominant ideologies become ingrained in everyday discourse. They become rationalized as ‘common-sense’ assumptions about the way things are and the way things should be. A process of *naturalization* takes place, to the extent that people are often no longer aware of the hierarchies and systems which shape their social interaction. [Italics in original]

In other words, “naturalization” is a “rationalization” process whereby ideological beliefs become presupposed knowledge and “common-sense” social representations. By the same token, Fowler (1996) refers to the tendency whereby ideological beliefs become “uncritical” as “habitualization”. Fowler (1996a: 12) defines “habitualization” as:

a basic tendency in the psychology of perception (and by extension, knowledge and meaning). If experience is habitual, perception becomes automatic and uncritical... Habitualization is staleness of thought and language.

In other words, ideologies become “naturalized”, “habitualized” and “rationalized” as “common sense” when they are part of what common people think and believe.

However, not all ideologies are “common-sense” assumptions and implicit beliefs. Leaders and elites, for example, tend to be more aware of the ideological beliefs and social representations which they try to inculcate among group members. In addition, oppositional ideologies, which oppose others and defend their own, are made and kept conscious (van Dijk 1998). To put it differently, dominant ideologies tend to be implicit and more effective when they are “habitualized” and “naturalized”, while oppositional ideologies tend to be explicit. Ideological awareness can be enhanced, or suppressed, particularly through discursive and social practices, such as communication, group parties, meetings, seminars and media messages. Totally implicit beliefs and opinions are rare, especially in most contemporary societies where “mass media” and “new media” are easily accessed by and widely available for large numbers of people³². In news media reports, ideological awareness can be enhanced by the textual and linguistic analysis of discourse, as illustrated in the following example from the data³³:

2.12. A controversial report by Brammertz’s German predecessor, Detleve Mehlis, had implicated senior officials from Syria. (Al-Manar English)

The use of “controversial” in sentence-initial position, i.e. Theme position, here indicates that Al-Manar news media presents this as the most important information in the clause. The information which comes later, “had implicated senior officials from Syria”, is presented as old and less important. The analysis of the Al-Manar report indicates that the accusations against Syria and its implication in the assassinations do not reflect Al-Manar’s political views. Other news media in the data, for example, strongly emphasise the link between these politicians and their anti-Syrian political background. Such strong emphasis helps to rationalize Syria’s involvement in the crimes and present the accusations against it as common-sense assumptions. The awareness of other’s ideological views is thus enhanced by the discursive practices and the linguistic choices in Al-Manar news media report.

2.4.3 Persuasion and Media Control

The social functions of ideologies focus on specific forms of social relation between groups, namely power and control. When a group A has power over another group B, this involves that group A controls the actions of members of group B. This also

³² See definitions of mass media and “new” media in section 2.1.

³³ Group 2, appendix B.

involves that group B acts in accordance with the wishes, interests and goals of group A, even if it is against its own interest and will. Relations of power and control include those of age, gender, social position and profession. Another form of power, which is traditionally associated with ideology and the Gramscian theory of hegemony, is persuasion (Herman and Chomsky 2002, Hawthorn 1987, Robins et al. 1987, Harré 1985 and van Dijk 1997; 1998). Unlike coercive power, persuasion indirectly controls people's actions by winning their consent. It implies asymmetrical relations of power and influence between a persuader and a persuadee, who acts out of his/her own free will to serve the goals and interests of the persuader (Harré 1985). There are four different components concerning the act of persuasion: the persuader, the persuadee, the persuasive discourse and the interlocking social, political and historical context (Hawthorn 1987). If persuasion is to be successful, certain conditions and techniques are required. These techniques include deception, emotions, implications, direct repetition and interpretations (Hawthorn 1987)³⁴. Persuasion implies deception. The persuaders deceive the persuadees by denying any intention for persuasion. The persuaders also deny the possession of rhetorical skills to assure their listeners that persuasion is not a result of succumbing to the verbal abilities of the persuaders, but a result of the persuadees' rational thoughts. Persuaders seem to engage their persuadees in a conversational discourse which draws upon their powers of reason. As a result, the persuadees rationalize, legitimate and justify the facts and statements presented in the persuasive discourse. According to Harré (1985), a rational discourse is the ultimate force of persuasion. However, a discourse which appeals to the listeners' emotions has been recognized to trigger action more quickly than a rational discourse. Hawthorn (1987: ix) notes that "the association between successful persuasion and the ability to arouse an emotional response in one's audience is an intimate one". Persuasion through the use of emotive words, in italics, is illustrated in the following examples from the data:

2.13. Syria Condemns east Beirut blast, *lashes out at slander campaign*.

(*Syria Times* English, G1)

2.14. Syria: The US accusation "*pure vilification*"

(Reuters Arabic, G3)

2.15. The source expressed Syria's *distress* at the condemned acts of explosion and assassination which target Lebanon's security, stability and civil peace.

(*Syria Times* English, G1)

³⁴ Direct repetition, implications and presuppositions will be analysed in Chapter 5.

Examples 2.13 and 2.14 are the headlines of the *Syria Times* and Reuters reports respectively, hence are presented as New information. “Syria” is presented as the thematic focus of these headlines. “Distress” is presented as New information in Rheme position of example 2.15. The use of emotive diction and their presentation as New information seek to persuade the readership of the truthfulness of the assertions contained within these news discourses. The act of persuasion also involves the use of implications, presuppositions and assumptions (see section 2.3.3.2). At the same time, it uses direct repetition of statements. The persuaders get the persuadees to accept what has been presented in the persuasive discourse by repeating statements and juxtaposing them with others which the persuadees reject³⁵. The constant repetition of statements such as “anti-Syrian MP”, “anti-Syrian lawmaker” and “anti-Syrian politician” in some news media reports strongly implies a connection between Syria and the assassinations of the Lebanese politicians. Such repetition helps to construct a certain representation of Syria which gradually becomes habitual and commonsensical. It also helps to persuade the readers to adopt the ideological and political interpretations expressed in the news discourse. Another condition for a successful persuasion is to encourage interpretation. The persuaders never present facts in isolation. Facts are presented with other propositions, assumptions and beliefs, which the persuadees join together to formulate particular views and opinions. These conditions and techniques give the persuadees the illusion that they are actively involved in discourse rather than passively absorbing what is provided by the persuaders. News discourse, in particular, is ideologically produced and reproduced in a way to be most effective and persuasive. The persuasion techniques are frequently observed in news presentation. The selection of news items in terms of what is true or false, interesting or uninteresting and newsworthy or not, is governed by rules, values and ideologies.

Other forms of ideology are manipulation and propaganda. Unlike persuasion, manipulation has negative moral implications (Harré 1985). It implies that the listeners are unaware of the manipulative act which is exerted upon them. It also implies that the effects of a successful manipulation are only in the interest of the manipulators, but unlikely in the best interest of the listeners. In manipulation, the listeners are treated as “things”, rather than as conscious human beings who are engaged in a rational discourse (Harré 1985). Similarly, propaganda entails a deliberate process of manipulation which is performed on susceptible individuals (Robins et al. 1987). It attempts to affect and

³⁵ Direct repetition will be further investigated in section 4.5.3.

control not only the minds of isolated individuals, but also their personalities, actions and behaviour. Like persuasion, propaganda works by emotional pressure which appeals to primitive impulses and trigger quick and complete response from the listeners. Ideological persuasion, manipulation and propaganda are mainly expressed through language, or discourse. There is an obvious and strong link between language use and power (van Dijk 1997). Social members who can express and articulate the goals and interests of the group can persuade others of their ideologies. However, in order to communicate effectively, social members must have common knowledge and shared social beliefs, i.e. what van Dijk (1998) terms as “social representations”. In a mass society, social representations, information and facts are mainly obtained through public discourse, such as education, information campaigns, and the media. Groups, social movements, elites, institutions and organizations which have access to public discourse and mass media can influence and manipulate the public by various mechanisms (Hawthorn 1987, Robins et al. 1987, van Dijk 1998, Herman and Chomsky 2002, Fairclough 1995 and Fairclough and Wodak 1997). These include restricting the flow and access of information by means of secrecy, security and censorship, hence only certain forms of knowledge and opinions are allowed, expressed and widely circulated. “The proliferation of information gathering” in accordance with the political, economic and social interests of these organizations is another mechanism of manipulation (Robins et al. 1987). Detailed and private information about individuals and families, which can violate their privacy, are collected to increase the power of people who have access to this information. Media language is also influenced by a tendency towards “marketization”, i.e. information is presented as a branch of entertainment and a commodity, as a result of the increasing commercial pressure and competition among institutions (Fairclough 1995). The “marketization” of media language subjects information to the values of the market whose main interest is to persuade the public into accepting their statements and beliefs.

In sum, mass media are effective and powerful ideological institutions which rely on the management and control of information to win the public consent³⁶. Hawthorn (1987: x) notes that:

The exercise of power requires the control of information as much as does the attainment of power... And if control of information gives power, so power gives

³⁶ Walter Lippmann (1921) uses the term “manufacturing of consent” which he closely associates with propaganda and public opinion.

one greater control over information... Persuasion is, thus, not a matter of what people are told, rather than what they are not told.

The roles of mass media are to maintain and confirm the status-quo, produce and reproduce relations of power and ideologies through persuasive discourse. Mass media function as “system-supportive propaganda”, according to Herman and Chomsky (2002), which rule by hegemony and consensus. They engineer the public consent and manage the public opinion by means of self-censorship, internalized social representations and marketization (Herman and Chomsky 2002). The management of information and the engineering of public consent may be observed in state-owned news media sources such as *Teshreen/Syria Times*. The English and Arabic news reports collected from this source tend not to report on the political background and views of the assassinated Lebanese politicians. Instead persuasive discourse is used to emphasise Syria’s innocence and its complete condemnation of these crimes (examples 2.13 and 2.15). If the mass media are the only channels of communication and information, then, the implications for the social representations which the public share remains uncertain (Robins et al. 1987). However, this control can hardly be total. People who seek various sources of information will be able to make up their minds, form their own opinions and find a way out of the propaganda system.

Having presented the ideological approach adopted in the analysis of news reports, the next section will review the Critical Discourse Analysis theory, its dimensions and shortcomings and propose practical solutions.

2.5 Critical Discourse Analysis and the News

This section will examine the theory of Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA), since this will underpin the linguistic approaches relevant to the analysis of the news in relation to discourse, ideology and Theme-Rheme organization³⁷. Section 2.5.1 will introduce the theory of Critical Discourse Analysis, the Hallidayan Functional model of language and stages of CDA. Section 2.5.2 will present the concept of discourse needed for a theory of Critical Discourse Analysis and the three dimensions of discourse. Key concepts in Critical Discourse Analysis will be examined in relation to ideology and power in

³⁷ Theme and Rheme will be discussed in Chapter 3.

section 2.5.3. Finally, section 2.5.4 will explore some of the objections to the theory of Critical Discourse Analysis and offers possible solutions.

2.5.1 What is CDA?

In the 1970s a group of linguists including Fowler et al. (1979) and Hodge and Kress (1979) developed the approach to discourse analysis called Critical Linguistics (CL). Critical Linguistics was further developed into Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA) in 1989 and the early 1990s by Norman Fairclough, Gunther Kress, Teun van Dijk and Ruth Wodak. Critical Discourse Analysis has absorbed Critical Linguistics and its techniques in analysing discourses. In fact, the two terms CDA and CL have been used interchangeably in many studies as well as here. Critical Linguistics (CL), or Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA), draws on two principal thinkers: the American linguist Benjamin Lee Whorf, and the British linguist Michael Halliday (Fowler 1991). The Whorfian hypothesis proposes that speakers of different languages view the world differently. As Fowler (1991: 30) puts it, “Differences of linguistic structure cause the speakers of different languages in some sense to “see the world” in different ways”. However, “the speaker can see through and around the settings of his semantic system” which is constructed by his own language (Halliday 1971: 332-333). They allow explaining, rephrasing and recoding of experience which is ingrained in language use. Alternative “semantic grids”, as Fowler (1991) points out, are present but not consciously and sufficiently exploited by speakers; hence the need for CL and Halliday’s Systemic Functional Linguistics, SFL. Halliday’s functional model of language examines the connection between linguistic structure and social values³⁸. His main premise is that linguistic forms are systematically affected by the social circumstances (Halliday 1978). Halliday suggests that language communicates ideas, processes and entities by serving three major functions: ideational, interpersonal and textual (Halliday 1985). The ideational function of language serves to represent events, processes and participants. The interpersonal function serves to express the speaker’s attitudes towards the events and the participants represented. The textual function of language serves to present these ideas and events in coherent texts, or in other words, it is the process of creating a text (Halliday 1985). It is through the interrelation of these functions that ideologies, political views and relations of power are revealed in news discourse.

³⁸ Halliday’s model will be discussed in detail in Chapter 3.

Drawing on Halliday's functional model of language, CDA studies language as a form of social practice determined by social structure (Fairclough 2001). Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA) is defined as the study of discourse in its social context (Fairclough 2001). Critical Linguistics or Critical Discourse Analysis attempts to combine a social theory of discourse with theories and methods of discourse analysis (Fairclough 1992). A social theory of discourse means that language use is a social practice that can both reflect and constitute social meanings (Fowler et al. 1979). CDA is a critical approach because it is both linguistically-oriented and socially-oriented (Fairclough 2001). Non-critical approaches are linguistically-oriented or simply descriptive: they merely describe the discursive events. Critical approaches do not only describe the discursive events but also reflect ideologies and relations of power through discourse (Fairclough 1992). CDA is not a mere description of language and the formal features of discourse but, rather, aims at explaining the connections between language, society, and ideology. In other words, CDA investigates the role of language in social contexts and the relations of power and hegemony in society (O'Halloran 2003). Concepts such as discourse, ideology and power are of major interest to the study of CDA, as is noted by O'Halloran (2003: 14):

Critical linguistics is the name used to describe the application of a particular set of linguistic procedures to texts with a view to uncovering concealed ideological meanings, whether or not intentional.

Corresponding to the definition of Critical Discourse Analysis, CDA can be divided into three stages: description, interpretation and explanation (Fairclough 2001). The *description* stage is interested in the formal properties of texts. The *interpretation* stage studies the interaction between the text and the discursive practices, i.e. processes of text production, distribution and consumption. The *explanation* stage is concerned with the relation between discourse and its social context. Ideologies and relations of power in news discourse are mainly investigated in the interpretation stage of CDA. Fairclough (2001: 126) notes that:

Another consequence is that ideologies and the power relations which underlie them have a deep and pervasive influence upon discourse interpretation and production, for they are embedded in the interpretative procedures – the social orders – which underlie the highest level of interpretative decisions on which others are dependent – *what situation am I in?*” [Italics in original]

In summary, Critical Discourse Analysis, or Critical Linguistics, is defined as the study of discourse in its social context. CDA can play a significant role in the study of language in the news and in revealing ideologies and social relations of power. The

next section will present a relevant definition of discourse and its three dimensions in relation to CDA theory.

2.5.2 CDA and Discourse

Discourse has many definitions in linguistics. Discourse can refer to samples of only spoken language, or to either spoken or written language. Discourse can also be defined as different types of language which are used in different social contexts, such as newspaper discourse, advertising discourse or medical discourse (Fairclough 1992). The notion of language use which is needed for Critical Discourse Analysis is “discourse as a social practice” (Fairclough 1992). Discourse for CDA is the representation of the world through the use of language and the constituting of meanings as an effect of the social institutions and organizations in a society (see section 2.2.2). Discourses in this sense do not only represent social entities (people or members of society) and social relations but also constitute and construct them and position people as social subjects such as doctors or patients (see section 2.2.2.2). Kress (1985: 6-7) also defines discourses in relation to CDA as “systematically-organized sets of statements which give expression to the meanings and values of an institution”. Henceforth, the notion of discourse which is adopted here indicates the relationship between a specific form of language use, spoken or written, and the notions of society and social relations.

Discourse for critical analysts is three-dimensional: it comprises text, discursive practice and social practice (Fairclough 1995). The first dimension of discourse relates to language analysis or text analysis. It focuses on certain features of texts such as wording, grammar, cohesion and coherence. Discursive practices, or discourse practices, are processes of text production, distribution and consumption. They refer to the activity of reading a text and understanding it by relating it to its context (O’Halloran 2003). Social practices refer to the relation between discourse and social institutions and organizations. Fairclough (1992: 4) points out:

The ‘social practice’ dimension attends to issues of concern in social analysis such as the institutional and organizational circumstances of the discursive event and how that shapes the nature of the discursive practice, and the constitutive/constructive effects of discourse. [Inverted commas in original]

It is in the third dimension of discourse namely social practices where relevant concepts of ideology, hegemony and control are discussed in relation to CDA in the language of the news. Since this study is interested in the language of the news in both Arabic and English and tries to expose the different ideological perspectives of Arabic-language and English-language news reports, it is considered essential to focus attention on discourse at all three levels in general and at the level of social practices in particular.

The next section will study the concepts of ideology and power in relation to Critical Discourse Analysis.

2.5.3 Ideology and Power in CDA

Discourse, ideology and power are basic concepts in studying Critical Discourse Analysis. Ideologies are defined as certain assumptions and points of view which are shared collectively by members of a society (see section 2.4). Ideologies are “partial” and “particular”, as Fowler (1979) points out, because ideologies differ from one society to another and from one culture to another. Members of the same society or people from the same cultural background tend to share the same world-views and the same understanding of the world around them. World-views, attitudes and points of views are expressed through discourse and constructed by society (Simpson 1993). Discourse in general and news discourse in particular is not “neutral” and free from cultural, political and ideological assumptions (see section 2.4.2). Different news discourses imply different world-views and different ideologies. Simpson (1993: 176/177) notes that:

Language use cannot be regarded as neutral, value-free or exempt from at least some ‘angle of telling’. Rather, it is shaped by a mosaic of cultural assumptions, political beliefs and institutional practices – in other words, ideologies.

Ideology, power and CDA are also closely related, as noted by Wodak (2001: 2):

CL and CDA may be defined as fundamentally concerned with analysing opaque as well as transparent structural relationships of dominance, discrimination, power and control as manifested in language. In other words, CDA aims to investigate critically social inequality as it is expressed, signalled, constituted, legitimized and so on by language use (or in discourse).

Critical discourse analysts aim to reveal ideologies and relations of power and dominance whether it is clear in discourse or not. Since discourse is a social practice, language not only reflects ideologies or points of views but also reproduces and

constructs them through social dominance and control (Simpson 1993). News discourse reflects certain ideologies and attitudes, which are mostly those of the news media institutions and the powerful members of the society. Ideologies become more dominant when they are the ideologies of powerful social or political groups such as the government (Simpson 1993). Powerful members of society may also force their ideologies into the language of the news by means of political dominance and control. Dominance – power and control - can be exercised either through “coercion” or “consent” (Fairclough 2001). In the case of news discourse, power and control are mainly exercised through the use of persuasive discourse to win the public consent (see section 2.4.3). Ideologies in news discourse thus operate by subtle consent through what Gramsci (1975) terms as “hegemony” (Fairclough 2001). The exercise of power through consent is illustrated in the following examples taken from Al-Jazeera English-language report, group 2:

2.16. Hariri inquiry *confirms suicide bomber*. (News headline)

2.17. Evidence found at the scene of the blast also included a tooth, probably of the bomber, which featured an unspecified “distinguishing mark” on its crown suggesting that he may not have been from Lebanon, the report said.

2.18. The killing’s complexity suggested that *the Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri’s assassination*.

2.19. Al-Hariri was a quiet *opponent* to Syria’s 30-year dominance of Lebanon.

2.20. Al-Hariri supporter *blamed the attack on Syria, which has denied any role*.

Given information usually comes first in the clause followed by New information (see section 3.4.3). New information here is presented in italics. The news discourse of Al-Jazeera reveals that the person responsible for Hariri’s murder “may not have been from Lebanon” – an information which is presented as New. The reference to Hariri’s political views, “opponent to Syria’s 30-year dominance of Lebanon”, and the implication of Syria’s involvement in his murder, “Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri’s assassination” and “blamed the attack on Syria”, are presented as New information in Rheme positions. The assumption that Syrians are behind the political assassinations in Lebanon is rationalized through the presentation of

discourse and information. The Al-Jazeera English media here exercises power by constructing a subject position which wins the readers' consent. Fairclough (1992) notes that ideologies work through constituting persons as social subjects, fixing them in subject "positions" while at the same time giving them the illusion of being free agents (see section 2.2.2). Simpson (1993: 6) identifies a key purpose of CDA in revealing the mechanism by which ideologies propagate:

The critical linguistic rationale outlined here raises a number of additional issues concerning the interrelationship of language and ideology. One of these is to do with the way dominant ideologies become ingrained in everyday discourse. They become rationalized as 'common-sense' [inverted commas in original] assumptions about the way things are and the way things should be. A process of *naturalization* [italics in original] takes place, to the extent that people are often no longer aware of the hierarchies and systems which shape their social interaction.

Everyday interaction helps dominant ideologies appear "natural" and "commonsensical", as was discussed in section 2.4.2. People become less aware of social systems and social hierarchies when ideologies appear to have a "common sense" (section 2.4.2). The job of critical discourse analysts is to reveal the different ideologies and world-views in different discourses, including news discourse, by applying methods of Critical Discourse Analysis, as will be discussed later in Chapter 4.

Critical Discourse Analysis claims to "demystify" and "denaturalize" what seems to be natural for non-critical readers, i.e. readers who read for gist (O'Halloran 2003). However claims of "demystification" and "manipulation" by CD analysts have provoked many criticisms. These criticisms are the subject of the next section.

2.5.4 Criticisms of CDA

Critical Discourse Analysis has been criticized for a number of reasons. Firstly, critical discourse analysts, Gunther Kress among them, claim that language can *distort* reality and *conceal the truth* from readers. Sharrock and Anderson (1981) refer to this point of weakness in the claim by pointing out that these authors are looking in the "wrong place". In their words (1981: 291):

One of the stock techniques employed by Kress and his colleagues is to look in the wrong place for something then complain that they can't find it, and suggest that it is being concealed from them.

However, other CD analysts, including Roger Fowler, see that the aim of CDA is not to explore the *concealment* of truth or the *distortion* of reality in discourse; rather it is to raise the readers' consciousness of the various ways of presenting reality (Fowler 1996). Secondly, CDA has been criticized for giving no attention to the readers' cognition and interpretation of texts. In other words, CDA, it is said, does not study the way readers comprehend, interpret and interact with the text according to their social background and social knowledge of the world. A specific discourse can be interpreted and comprehended differently by different social subjects or readers. Discourses do not have "fixed meanings" (Fowler 1996). Rather, they are open to different meanings and multiple interpretations. Fowler (1996: 7) refers to this point of weakness as follows³⁹:

But the reader, in this theory, is not the passive recipient of fixed meanings: the reader...is discursively equipped prior to the encounter with the text, and reconstructs the text as a system of meanings which may be more or less congruent with the ideology which informs the text.

In order to avoid partial interpretations of discourse, critical analysts need to evaluate the news against its social and cognitive background. This study incorporates a socio-cognitive model to analyse news structures and ideologies within its conceptual framework of news discourse analysis. Section 2.2 discussed how news receivers construct meanings by encoding and decoding information into discourse (section 2.2.3.1). The readers' construction of meanings was further illustrated by concepts such as implications, presuppositions and propositions, which are introduced in the structural model developed in section 2.3. The analysis of these concepts in relation to what is presented in news discourse in general and news headlines in particular and the investigation of lexical meanings and relations in Theme-Rheme structures (see section 4.5) seek to reveal the different meanings and interpretations as presented by news producers and comprehended by news receivers (as will be discussed in sections 5.3 and 5.4). Thirdly, Critical Linguistics has been criticized for analysing fragmentary texts. Some analysts tend to focus on one or two paragraphs while ignoring the rest of the text. According to Fowler (1996: 8):

Although demonstrations have focused on a good range of types of texts, they tend to be fragmentary, exemplificatory, and they usually take too much for granted in the way of method and context.

To avoid such criticism, this study focuses on news discourse analysis both at the local and global levels. More specifically, this study investigates underlying ideologies in

³⁹ The roles of the readers are discussed in section 2.2.3.

Theme-Rheme structures at the sentence level as well as the text level, namely global themes, macropropositions (section 2.3.3.1) and Thematic Progression patterns (section 3.3.4). It also employs quantitative and qualitative methods to analyse linguistic choices and organization in the thematic structures of the clause. The quantitative methods will allow for a statistical analysis of the linguistic features present in these texts. Fourthly, CDA is criticized for offering “partial” and “subjective” readings of texts. Widdowson (2004) criticizes CD analysts for focusing on certain aspects of texts while ignoring others, fitting their own interpretation to what they have analysed, and then claiming that these texts manipulate the readers (Widdowson 2004). Fowler (1996) recognizes the same problem, namely CD analysts tend to focus on small selected processes, such as nominalization or passivization, then to fit their own interpretation. Fowler (1996: 8) notes that: “In practice critical linguists get a very high mileage out of a small selection of linguistic concepts such as transitivity and nominalization”. In the analysis of an article about illegal immigrants in the *Sun* newspaper, for example, van Dijk focuses his analysis only on one textual element, namely “working for a *pittance*”, while ignoring others which could strongly disprove his argument that the *Sun* has an unfavourable attitude towards immigrants (Widdowson 2004). Stubbs (1997) refers to the same problem as *circularity*, i.e. critical linguists interpret the text first and find in the text what they want to find in order to support their own interpretation. In his words (1997: 106):

If language and thought are to be related, then one needs data and theory pertinent to both. If we have no independent evidence, but infer beliefs from language use, then the theory is circular.

In order to strengthen the evidence in its argument, CDA needs to improve several areas including a thorough textual analysis (Toolan 1997). Such analysis can be achieved here by investigating different aspects of texts including thematization, nominalization, lexicalization, repetition, marked/unmarked thematic structures and Given/New information. Finally, CDA is criticized for lacking a clear and explicit linguistic toolkit. Widdowson (2004) criticizes CD analysts, Wodak in particular, for offering incomprehensive methodologies and an inexplicit framework of analysis. Widdowson (2004: 167) notes that:

Wodak describes her approach to CDA as a method and talks about methodology, but offers little more than a ‘checklist’ by way of guidance as to how to make the method operational. [Inverted commas in original]

Fowler (1996) also notes that CDA requires explicit and comprehensive methodological procedures to avoid a selective analysis of the data. In this study, explicit methodologies and comprehensive linguistic tools including Theme/Rheme analysis, thematization, nominalization, lexicalization, implications and repetition will be employed to critically analyse the style of the news reports selected for analysis.

To sum up, most criticisms of CDA are related to modes of analysis and interpretation. The problem with CDA, as noted by Widdowson (2004: ix), seems to be more in practice than in theory. Attempts have been made here to avoid the weaknesses of CDA which have been raised by critics. This study incorporates within its theory social, cognitive and structural aspects of discourse analysis which help to account for the different social and ideological representations in news discourse. It also proposes comprehensive methods and thorough textual analysis of Theme-Rheme structures on a small corpus of English and Arabic news reports rather than on isolated sentences. The analysis of a large corpus does not necessarily provide consistent patterns and trends⁴⁰.

The next chapter will develop a theoretical framework to analyse sentence constituents in terms of Theme and Rheme. The functional approaches which critical analysts use to analyse English and Arabic sentences will be discussed in an attempt to find objective and comprehensive methods to analyse the selected English- and Arabic-language news reports.

2.6 Concluding Remarks

The aim of this chapter was to propose a conceptual framework capable of investigating underlying ideologies in news discourse analysis. This section reviewed the language of the news in relation to discourse, society and ideology. The way news is presented is influenced mainly by three factors, namely news production, the roles of discourse and news reception. News discourse is the product of many hands and “many hands make tight work”, as noted by Bell (1991: 34). Thus, it is difficult to identify who is responsible for the thoughts expressed and the style used in a given news discourse. Discourse influences news construction by defining and delimiting what is possible to say and what is not. The social representations, i.e. ideas, beliefs, values and ideologies which are collectively shared among members of society, are implemented and

⁴⁰ See section 4.2.1.

expressed through discourse. At the same time, discourse is motivated by differences and conflicts. The aim of discourse is to resolve all discursive differences by creating subject positions and ideal readers. The roles of discourse is thus to construct meanings and reality and to create subject and reading positions. The audience also constructs the meanings of a news discourse. They can influence the way the news is presented simply by being the audience of specific news media or institutions.

Since news presentation is largely influenced by discourse, it was essential to discuss the textual structures and dimensions of discourse in general and English and Arabic news discourse in particular. The textual structures of news reports involve the study of both the local and global levels of discourse. Text typology was defined and news text types were discussed in relation to English- and Arabic-language news reports and news media. The roles of news topics, i.e. global themes, which are usually expressed in news headlines and lead paragraphs, were discussed at the macrostructure level of news reports. The notions of presupposition and implications, which are later analysed in the data, were discussed at the microlevel structure of news reports. The habitual and rational style of news reports is considered an important dimension of an ideological representation of the news.

An ideological approach to news discourse analysis was then presented in relation to discourse, society and cognition. Van Dijk's multidisciplinary approach to ideology was adopted and relevant notions of false consciousness, common sense, naturalisation and media control were discussed.

Finally, the analysis of news discourse which relates discourse, ideology and social practices was examined under Critical Discourse Analysis and Halliday's Systemic Functional Linguistics, SFL. Some of the criticisms of this approach were presented and solutions were proposed in the current study. The linguistic tools, which are used here to analyse the English- and Arabic-language news reports, will be presented and developed in Chapters 3 and 4. The following chapter will first focus on the methodological approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in the English and Arabic languages.

CHAPTER THREE

A THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK FOR THEME-RHEME ANALYSIS

3.1 Introductory Remarks

This chapter will investigate the notions of Theme and Rheme and the different approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in both English and Arabic. The main aims of this chapter are to find a relevant definition of Theme and Rheme for analysing English- and Arabic- language news reports and to develop an appropriate theoretical framework for Theme-Rheme analysis in both languages. More specifically, this chapter will discuss the theory of Functional Sentence Perspective as presented in the works of the Prague School linguists, Mathesius, Firbas and Daneš, and the Hallidayan approach in English, on the one hand, and the works of traditional and modern Arab grammarians and linguists studying Classical and Modern Standard Arabic, on the other. Section 3.2 will introduce the historical background of the concepts of Theme and Rheme. Section 3.3 will then discuss some of the most popular ideas introduced by Czech scholars, such as Given and New information, the notion of Communicative Dynamism and Thematic Progression in relation to Theme-Rheme structure. A different approach to Theme-Rheme analysis will then be discussed in section 3.4, namely the Hallidayan approach, along with the concept of markedness and the different marked Themes in the English clause. The structure of the Arabic clause will be discussed in section 3.5 along with the traditional treatment of Theme and Rheme in Arabic Nominal sentences. Section 3.6 will then present the modern Arab approach - a functional approach adopted by a few modern Arab scholars who rejected the traditional treatment of Theme and Rheme as grammatical categories of Nominal sentences in Classical Arabic. This approach applies the Functional Sentence Perspective theory to Modern Standard Arabic and considers both Verbal and Nominal sentences in Theme/Rheme analysis. The traditional and the modern Arab approach will be assessed and critically reviewed in an attempt to develop a theoretical framework for analysing Theme and Rheme in Arabic.

A brief historical discussion of the Prague School approach and the way Theme and Rheme are perceived in relation to the theory of Functional Sentence Perspective (FSP) is the subject of the next section.

3.2 A Historical Background

Much credit has been given to the Prague School linguists, Mathesius, Firbas and Daneš among others, for developing the concepts of Theme and Rheme. However, these two concepts had been used well before that (Adjémian 1978). In the 19th century, a German-born French scholar Henri Weil introduced for the first time the notions of Theme and Rheme in his book *De l'Ordre des Mots dans les Langues Anciennes Comparées aux Langues Modernes*⁴¹. In his book, Weil (1879) insists that word order reflects the sequence of ideas in a context, i.e. the distribution of words in a sentence is determined by the development of thought expressed by individuals to satisfy a communicative act (Adjémian 1978). He also distinguishes between the movement of ideas expressed by word order and the grammatical movement of elements, i.e. the semantic structure and the grammatical structure. Moreover, Weil compares the different types of languages based on their word order, i.e. languages with fixed word order like English and languages with free word order like Greek, Czech and Latin. He also studies the different positions of verbs in these languages. For instance, the verb is usually the second element in French and the final element in Turkish. In order to illustrate his theory of word order, Weil (1879) analyses the sentence as consisting of two parts: Theme and Rheme. Weil (1879: 20-21) defines Theme as “le point de départ” or “the point of departure” and Rheme as the “goal of discourse”. He also notes that the point of departure in modern European languages like English is normally the Subject which is “equally present” and known to both speaker and the hearer. Furthermore, Weil also considers the possibility of sentences with no point of departure, “themeless” sentences, such as those beginning with *there is/are*, e.g. *There was a king*. Another significant contribution by Weil is the role of “stress” which usually falls on the word or group of words which receive most focus in the sentence. This definition helps the Prague School linguists to develop their own definition of Theme proper and Rheme proper. Theme proper is defined as the element which receives the most stress and focus in Theme position while Rheme proper is defined as the element effecting most the completion of the message (Ghadessy 1995).

Although Weil’s analysis of word order and his notions of Theme and Rheme were not yet developed into a coherent theory of language, nor tested by analytical and empirical

⁴¹ Weil’s book was translated into English by Charles W. Super in 1877. The translated book was published in 1887 and entitled *The Order of Words in the Ancient Languages Compared with that of the Modern Languages*.

means, his theory was perceptive (Adjémian 1978). Weil was able to free himself from the constraints of descriptive grammar by starting to consider the sentence from a “functional” or “communicative” point of view which took into consideration both the speaker and the hearer present in the act of communication (Adjémian 1978). Weil inspired a whole generation of linguists, especially the Prague scholars Mathesius, Firbas and Daneš who are the focus of the next section.

3.3 The Prague School Approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis

This section will introduce the Functional Sentence Perspective approach and the two notions of Theme and Rheme as presented by the Prague School linguists. The definition of Theme and Rheme will be discussed in terms of sentence position, Given and New information and the degrees of Communicative Dynamism⁴². The organization of Theme-Rheme and patterns of Thematic Progression will also be provided in an attempt to identify a relevant definition for the purposes of the present study and develop a model of Theme-Rheme analysis in English.

3.3.1 Functional Sentence Perspective

Vilém Mathesius (1939, 1974), among other Prague School linguists, introduced the theory of language called Functional Sentence Perspective (FSP) or the information-bearing structure of the sentence. The basic assumption of this school is that the grammatical structure and the information-bearing structure of a sentence reflect what the speaker/writer has in mind in a given context. Mathesius (1939: 467) notes that “the information-bearing structure of the sentence refers to the way in which the sentence is related to the factual situation from which it has sprung”. In other words, the structure of the sentence in terms of Given and New information reflects the situation of context in which the sentence occurs. FSP is also defined as a level of analysis that “reflects the distribution of elements of the sentence according to the role they play as functional units of discourse” (Adjémian 1978: 265). To put it differently, the organization of the constituents of a sentence, i.e. word order, is determined by the communicative function of these constituents in order to reflect what the speaker/writer has in mind and wishes to communicate in a given context. In FSP, it is what the speaker/writer intends to communicate that is represented in the sentence in terms of Theme-Rheme organization.

⁴² Capital letters are adopted from Halliday (2004).

In other words, the speaker/writer arranges sentence constituents to reflect his/her decision of what to relay and what not to relay in the context of the utterance. Three different aspects of Theme and Rheme have been pointed out in the works dealing with FSP:

- Theme as topic or the starting point of the utterance and Rheme as comment or the goal of discourse
- Theme as known (Given) information and Rheme as unknown (New) information
- Theme as communicatively less important than Rheme (Firbas's notion of Communicative Dynamism, see section 3.3.3)

The following sections will focus on these different aspects of Theme and Rheme in the works of some Prague linguists.

3.3.2 Theme as Topic and Known Information

Mathesius defines Theme as “the starting point of the utterance” and “that which is known or at least obvious in the given situation and from which the speaker proceeds” (Mathesius 1939: 234). Rheme, on the other hand, is defined as “the core of the utterance” and “what the speaker states about, or in regard to, the starting point of the utterance” (Mathesius 1939: 234). In between these two parts comes a Transition that represents the verbal element(s) in the sentence. Mathesius's definition of Theme and Rheme involves both position and recoverability or conveyance of Given and New information. The Theme occupies first position in a sentence and conveys Given or known information which can be easily recovered by the hearer and predicted from the immediate context. The Rheme comes after the Theme and conveys New or unknown information which cannot be recovered or predicted from the context. Following Mathesius's definitions, the Czech system considers the sequence Theme-Transition-Rheme to indicate “objective” word order, i.e. the normal and unmarked development of information in a sentence, starting from Given towards New information, while the sequence Rheme-Transition-Theme to indicate “subjective” word order, i.e. marked, starting from New towards Given information (Mathesius 1939)⁴³.

⁴³ See Firbas (1966; 1974) and Adjémian (1978) on the discussion of Mathesius's functional approach to language.

Indeed, Mathesius's major contribution is his inquiry into the role played by FSP in determining word order and the analysis of Theme and Rheme in modern European languages (Firbas 1974). However, Mathesius does not distinguish between the thematic structure, Theme as first initial element followed by Rheme, and the informational structure, the conveyance of known information by Theme and unknown information by Rheme. Moreover, Mathesius's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in FSP fails to account for the most natural and unmarked use of language as Firbas (1974) illustrates in his example *A girl came into the room*. Firbas (1974) notes that unmarked structures such as *A girl came into the room* should represent the sequence Theme-Transition-Rheme, which is not the case if Mathesius's approach is to apply. The known information in such a sentence is conveyed by the setting, i.e. the Adjunct *into the room*, which represents the recoverable or the contextually dependent elements in the text, while the unknown information is conveyed by the Subject, *A girl*. The Transition or the verb remains the same. Following Mathesius's criterion of recoverability in identifying Theme and Rheme, the unmarked structure *A girl came into the room* represents the sequence Rheme-Transition-Theme instead of Theme-Transition-Rheme. Therefore, using Mathesius's approach to analyse the above sentence shows that sentences in their "most natural use" are "insusceptible to FSP" (Firbas 1974). In other words, unmarked structures do not always correspond to the sequence Theme-Transition-Rheme in Mathesius's approach. Moreover, Firbas (1966) rejects Mathesius's ideas regarding the possibility that some sentences have no Theme. For Firbas (1966), the Theme should be defined in a way that can be applicable to all types of sentences, a view shared in this study. For the above reasons, Firbas attempts to develop an FSP approach in the light of what he calls Communicative Dynamism.

3.3.3 The Notion of Communicative Dynamism

Firbas (1966) disagrees with Mathesius's approach to Theme as known information and Rheme as unknown information. Therefore, Firbas (1966, 1974) develops a new criterion to identify these two concepts, namely that of the degree of Communicative Dynamism carried by the sentence elements. By Communicative Dynamism or CD, Firbas (1966) means the contribution of sentence constituents to the development of the act of communication between participants. Firbas (1966: 270) notes that "by the degree of CD carried by a sentence element we understand the extent to which the sentence element contributes to the development of the communication, to which it

“pushes the communication forward”, as it were.” According to Firbas’s notion of CD, the final order of elements within a sentence is brought about by the interplay of two factors, the basic distribution of CD and the semantic structure of the sentence. By basic distribution of CD, Firbas (1966: 270) means “the capability of sentence positions of gradually raising the degrees of CD, in the direction from the beginning towards the end of the sentence.” In other words, the basic distribution of CD refers to the most “natural” way of developing communication starting with context-dependent elements, i.e. those elements which contribute least to the development of communication, and ending with context-independent elements, those which contribute most to the development of communication. To put it differently, the basic distribution indicates the gradational movement from the least to the most communicative elements in the sentence. The other factor is the semantic structure of the sentence whose main purpose at the FSP level is to highlight those elements which are contextually independent and which only convey New information, i.e. those revealing the highest degree of CD. In other words, the semantic structure identifies the position of Given and New information in the sentence, e.g. whether constituents revealing New information come last or first in the sentence⁴⁴. The semantic structure is thus capable of acting under certain conditions either parallel to or counter to the basic distribution of CD, i.e. whether the sequence within a sentence is Theme-Transition-Rheme or Rheme-Transition-Theme, as will be discussed shortly. So, it is the functioning of these two factors, i.e. the basic distribution of CD and the semantic structure of the sentence, which helps to shape the Functional Sentence Perspective approach in Firbas’s (1966) model.

Given this concept of CD, Firbas (1966: 272) defines the Theme as “constituted by the sentence element (or elements) carrying the lowest degree(s) of CD within the sentence.” In other words, the Theme constitutes those elements which are communicatively least important or contribute least to the development of the communication. On the other hand, Firbas (1966) defines the Rheme as those elements carrying the highest degree of CD within the sentence, i.e. which are communicatively most important or contribute most to the development of the act of communication. Moreover, Firbas (1966) uses the term Transition to refer to verbs in their unmarked use, i.e. when speakers develop communication by introducing the context-dependent elements first and then the context-independent, i.e. the sequence Theme-Rheme.

⁴⁴ This can be compared to the information structure discussed by Halliday in section 4.4.2.

Verbs, according to Firbas (1966), are neither part of the Theme nor the Rheme, but rank between them. The term Transition thus refers to those elements which are communicatively more important than the Theme and less important than the Rheme. For instance, in the following sentence presented by Firbas (1974), *A girl came into the room*, *A girl* is analysed as the Rheme because it carries the highest degree of CD, the Adverb *into the room* is the Theme because it carries the lowest degree of CD and the notion of appearance represented by the verb *came* is the Transition because it ranks between the two. Following these definitions, Theme in Firbas's approach, unlike Mathesius's, can convey not only known information but also unknown information. In order to illustrate the difference between the concept of givenness, as used in Mathesius's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis, and Theme as the carrier of the lowest degree of CD, Firbas (1974) presents the following example: *An unknown man has asked him the way to the railway station*. In this example, *an unknown man* expresses neither known nor obvious information to the hearer. At the same time, the Subject *an unknown man* conveys the lowest degree of CD in comparison to other sentence elements, thus, functioning as the Theme of that sentence. Firbas (1966: 270) explains as follows:

It is obvious that elements conveying new, unknown information show higher degrees of CD than elements conveying known information. But even within a sentence section made up entirely of elements conveying new information, the degrees of CD are not the same (homogeneous).

Although the implications of Firbas's notion are of major significance to the development of the FSP approach, some linguists still refrain from using CD as a criterion for Theme-Rheme analysis. Chafe (1974), for instance, questions the speaker's assumption that elements conveying intermediate degrees of CD are in the addressee's consciousness. He criticizes Firbas's notion of transitional elements as lacking a clear and concise definition, noting "in fact, it seems to me that this aspect of the Czech view has resulted from a confusion of various factors, but especially from a failure to distinguish clearly between elements of semantic structure and elements of surface structure" (1974: 120). For instance, finite verbs such as *go*, *goes* and *went* which reflect aspect, person and tense are normally associated with the Transition according to Firbas's approach. At the surface level, finite verbs are always pronounced with low pitch. At the semantic level, however, finite verbs can convey new information. Hence, there is no means to tell whether an element is partially or completely in the consciousness of the hearer. Therefore, according to Chafe (1974),

the notion of Communicative Dynamism is not supported by linguistic evidence. Adjémian (1978) also criticizes CD for its inaccuracy, subjectivity and impracticality. He describes “Firbas’s innovation” as “an unfortunate move” in linguistics:

Firbas’s innovation was an unfortunate move in that the notion of CD as he defines it is extremely vague and almost impossible to utilize in a rigorous linguistic description... A relative concept of functional structure is difficult to test operationally. Consequently, claims based on it may be nothing more than speculation. It is precisely this lack of rigor that has discouraged many contemporary linguists working in a formal framework from seriously considering the work of the Prague School in grammar. (1978: 266)

According to Adjémian (1978), the notion of CD seems difficult to define and test in practical terms. There is no objective means to determine what the speakers assume the hearers interpret and understand as most or least communicative. Judging the degrees of Communicative Dynamism carried by sentence elements is not by any means a “binary choice”, as noted by Chafe (1974), i.e. it is impossible to define exactly the degree of CD associated with some sentence elements and whether the speaker/writer and hearer/reader associate these elements with exactly the same degree of CD in the sentence. What is needed for an FSP approach is a practical and objective criterion on which the notions of Theme and Rheme can be tested and defined rigorously. In spite of the fact that Firbas’s notion of CD has been criticized by many linguists, the contributions and implications of his approach should not be overlooked.

Having discussed Firbas’s approach to Theme-Rheme analysis and his notion of CD, the next section will focus on the approach of Daneš, whose works on FSP and Theme-Rheme analysis have also contributed to the development of a functional theory of language.

3.3.4 The Three-Level Approach to Syntax and Thematic Progression

Another influential figure in the field of FSP is František Daneš. His works on FSP appeared around the same time as Firbas’s and are based on the same notion of CD. Daneš’s major contributions to the study of Theme and Rheme include the three-level approach to syntax and Thematic Progression (TP). Daneš (1964) proposes that treating a syntactic or a grammatical problem, such as Theme and Rheme, requires an analysis of the three levels of syntax, namely:

1. The grammatical structure of the sentence
2. The semantic structure of the sentence
3. The organization of the utterance or the FSP level

The first level, the grammatical structure of the sentence, refers to the grammatical relations existing between sentence elements. For example, in a sentence like *John saw Mary yesterday*, *John* represents the grammatical function subject, *saw* represents the verb, *Mary* the object and *yesterday* the adverb. The grammatical categories, subject, verb, object and adverb, are based on the syntactic forms and represent the linguistic features of the sentence. The second level of grammar, the semantic structure, is based on the semantic content of the utterance and represents the extra-linguistic features. At the semantic level, the word *John*, in *John saw Mary*, functions as the actor or the doer of the action, *saw* as the action or the process itself and *Mary* as the patient or the one affected by the action. Although in most cases the subject of the sentence is the actor and the object is the patient, these two levels should not be confused. For example, in the following sentence presented by Daneš (1964: 225) *John is easy to please*, *John*, who is the subject of the sentence, is not the doer of the action but the affected participant⁴⁵. Therefore, the interaction between the grammatical level and the semantic level helps to give a full account of the overall linguistic system. However, to ensure such a full account, a third level of grammar needs to be considered, that is the organization of the utterance. According to Daneš (1964), the organization of the utterance reflects the semantic reality presented by sentence elements at the surface level. In other words, the third level refers to how the grammatical and the semantic levels function in the very act of communication (Daneš 1964). At the same time, the act of communication is the product of the speaker's perception of the utterance, the content of the message, context, situation and the attitude of the speaker towards both the message and the addressee. These conditions also contribute to the final outcome regarding word order in the surface structure of the sentence (Daneš 1964). Thus, the organization of the utterance represents the "functional perspective", or the FSP level as referred to by Firbas (1966), which is the principle of ordering sentence elements according to CD, starting from the lowest degree, i.e. the thematic elements, towards the highest degree, i.e. the rhematic elements. It is, however, at the third level of syntax, i.e. the FSP level, that Theme and Rheme analysis operates and is discussed along with

⁴⁵ Daneš's example can be rendered as *This pleases John*.

other linguistic devices such as intonation, stress and the order of words and clauses⁴⁶ (Daneš 1966).

In addition, Daneš (1974) proposes that at the FSP level of grammar patterns of Thematic Progression (TP) can be identified across texts. His basic assumption is that coherence and connectivity in discourse are maintained and described by the choice and ordering of Themes in texts (Daneš 1974). Daneš (1974: 114) defines TP as:

The choice and ordering of utterance themes, their mutual concatenation and hierarchy, as well as their relationship to the hyperthemes of the superior text units (such as the paragraph, chapter, ...), to the whole text, and to the situation. Thematic Progression might be viewed as the skeleton of the plot.

In other words, TP refers to the sequence of Themes from one clause to the other and the relation between Themes in one paragraph, chapter or text as well as their relation to the overall main theme of the text, or the hypertheme from which all themes are derived⁴⁷. While Firbas's notion of CD attempts to analyse Theme and Rheme on the microstructure level of the utterance, i.e. the sentence level, TP establishes Theme-Rheme analysis on the macrostructure level of the utterance, i.e. the level of the paragraph, chapter and text (Daneš 1974). According to Daneš (1974) three main types of TP can be identified:

1. Simple linear TP
2. TP with a continuous or constant theme
3. TP with derived themes

The first type, linear progression, represents the most basic type of TP in which each Rheme (R) becomes the Theme (T) of the following sentence. Daneš (1974: 118) illustrates the simple linear TP by presenting the following example in which part of the Rheme of the first sentence (R1), *Alexander Flemming*, becomes the Theme of the next sentence (T2)⁴⁸:

3.1. The first of the antibiotics was discovered by Sir Alexander Flemming [sic] in 1928. He was busy at the time investigating certain species of germ.

The simple linear type can be represented in the following figure:

⁴⁶ Given that the data in this thesis are written texts, the concepts of intonation and stress will not be discussed, since these two concepts operate in spoken texts only.

⁴⁷ Also referred to as global theme, see section (2.3.2.1).

⁴⁸ R1 and T2 are underlined.

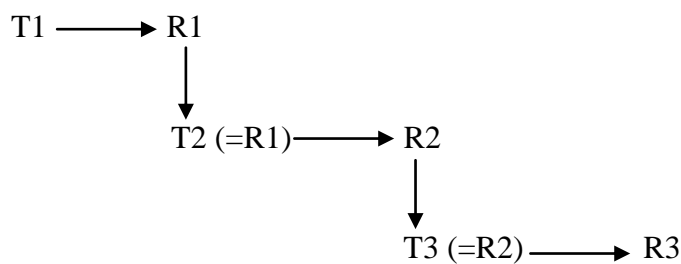


Figure 3.1 Linear TP

In the second type, TP with a continuous or constant Theme, the same Theme appears in all sentences although not necessarily the very same wording and is related to different Rhemes. This type of TP can be illustrated in the following example⁴⁹:

3.2. The Rousseauist especially feels an inner kinship with Prometheus and other Titans. He is fascinated by any form of insurgency... He must show an elementary energy in his explosion against the established order.

The continuous Themes, which have been underlined, are “The Rousseauist”, “He” and “He” in the first, second and third sentences respectively. TP with a constant Theme can be presented in Figure 3.2:

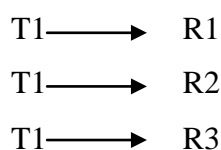


Figure 3.2 TP with a Continuous Theme

The third main type, TP with derived Themes, refers to the process whereby the themes of particular utterances are derived from a “hypertheme”. The “hypertheme” is defined as the main Theme of the higher unit of discourse, paragraph, chapter or text (Daneš 1974). For instance, in the following example⁵⁰:

3.3. New Jersey is flat along the coast and southern portion; the north-western region is mountainous. The coastal climate is mild.

“New Jersey” is the “hypertheme” from which all other Themes, *the northern-western region* and *the coastal climate*, are derived. The third type of TP, namely TP with derived Themes, can be presented in Figure 3.3:

⁴⁹ An example presented by Daneš (1974: 119).

⁵⁰ Daneš (1974: 120).

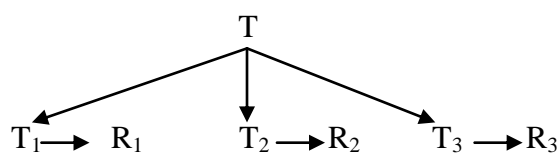


Figure 3.3 TP with Derived Themes

In order to identify thematic patterns in discourse, Daneš (1974) follows a procedure based on the *wh*-questions. He proposes that asking questions beginning with *what*, *who*, *where*, *when* and *why*, helps to present all kinds of possible contexts and hence to determine which elements are thematic and which are rhematic⁵¹. The answer to the *wh*-questions will refer to the new information or the elements conveying the highest degree of communicative dynamism. Given that the context of discourse is present to both speakers and hearers, Daneš (1974) claims that the *wh*-question procedure is an objective way of identifying Themes and Rhemes. However, if both Theme and Rheme are unknown information, deciding which element conveys the highest degree of CD can be subjective. The *wh*-questions will often lead to different answers and different interpretations. In addition, there are cases where transitional elements are communicatively more important than both Themes and Rhemes, as will be discussed later. From a practical perspective, it is thus still somehow speculative to assign objectively an exact degree of CD to a particular element in context. Even Daneš (1974: 114) himself admits that the answer to this will be “a rough determination of the thematic and rhematic part of the utterance”. As a result, it is difficult to consider this procedure as an objective and definite way of determining thematic, transitional and rhematic elements in discourse.

Having discussed the three-level approach to syntax and the theory of Thematic Progression presented by Daneš along with some of its shortcomings, the next section will deal with Halliday’s approach to Theme-Rheme analysis.

3.4 The Hallidayan Approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis

The Functional Sentence Perspective (FSP) approach made a major contribution to the analysis of the clause as a message. This section will introduce Halliday’s model of functional grammar and compare it with that of the Prague School. Section 3.4.1 will present Halliday’s definition of Theme and Rheme. Section 3.4.2 will then discuss the

⁵¹ Firbas (1974) also follows this procedure in the analysis of different degrees of CD.

status of sentence-initial constituents, namely topical, textual and interpersonal Themes. A discussion of the thematic structure and the information structure of the clause will be dealt with in section 3.4.3. The concept of markedness and the unmarked thematic structures in English clauses are discussed in sections 3.4.4 and 3.4.5 respectively. The different thematic structures will then be presented in section 3.4.6 along with types of marked Themes in English clauses.

The next section will define Theme and Rheme according to the Hallidayan model of analysis.

3.4.1 The Definition of Theme and Rheme

According to Halliday (1967), the clause as a message comprises two functional units, Theme and Rheme. Halliday (1967: 212) defines the Theme as “what is being talked about” or “the point of departure for the clause as a message” and defines Rheme as what the speaker says about the Theme or the goal of the message, i.e. the element which fulfils the communicative purpose of the utterance. Theme and Rheme are position-bound elements which are defined according to their positions in the sentence. A Theme always occupies the first position in a sentence and is followed and commented on by a Rheme. As Halliday (2004: 64) notes, “the theme is indicated by position in the clause. In speaking or writing English we signal that an item has thematic status by putting it first”. A Theme can be either a single word, such as “That” and “He” in examples 3.4 and 3.5 respectively, or a group of words, i.e. a nominal group such as “The Walrus and the Carpenter” in example 3.6, or a prepositional phrase such as “from house to house” in example 3.7.

3.4. That *is what I want.*

3.5. He *is my good friend.*

3.6. The Walrus and the Carpenter *were talking close at hand.* (Nominal group)

3.7. From house to house, *I wend my way*⁵². (Prepositional phrase)

According to the Hallidayan model of analysis, the speaker can choose within certain limits which element or elements in the clause are thematic, whether a Subject, a Complement, or an Adjunct⁵³. The rest of the sentence, “*were talking close at hand*”

⁵² Examples 4.6 and 4.7 are used by Halliday (2004: 68).

⁵³ Capital letters are adopted from Halliday (2004).

and “*I wend my way*”, function as the Rhemes in examples 3.6 and 3.7 respectively⁵⁴. The most common type of Theme in English is a nominal group functioning as an agent, or a Subject, such as “The lecturer” and “the little boy” in the following examples:

3.8. The lecturer *gave a presentation on linguistics.*

3.9. The little boy *broke the teapot.*

Unlike the Prague School linguists who analyse verbs as transitional elements, Halliday considers verbs as part of the rhematic element, such as “*gave*” and “*broke*” in the last two examples.

Having defined Theme and Rheme according to Halliday’s functional model of grammar, the next section will discuss the status of sentence initial-elements in terms of topical, textual and interpersonal Themes in Halliday’s model.

3.4.2 Topical, Textual and Interpersonal Themes

According to the Hallidayan model, the Theme contains one, and only one, of the “experiential elements” of the clause, i.e. one topical Theme, but one or more textual and interpersonal Themes as in the following example:

3.10. But then finally to my surprise Jean *joins in.*

The different types of Themes in example 3.10 are shown in the Table 3.1

| | | | | | | |
|---------|---------|---------|----------------|---------|-------|----|
| But | then | finally | to my surprise | Jean | joins | in |
| textual | textual | textual | interpersonal | topical | | |
| Theme | | | | | Rheme | |

Table 3.1 Types of Themes in Halliday’s Model

Halliday (2004: 66) defines topical Themes as “the first group or phrase that has some function in the experiential structure of the clause”. The experiential structure refers to the function of the clause “as a representation of some process in ongoing human experience” (Halliday 2004: 59). To be more specific, the meaning of the clause as representation of process has three elements: the process itself, i.e. the verb, the participants in the process and the circumstantial factors, i.e. adverbials and

⁵⁴ In this section, Themes are underlined in all examples, whereas Rhemes are italicized.

prepositional phrases. These elements are referred to as the “experiential elements” of the clause. To put it differently, topical Themes involve a Subject, verb⁵⁵, Complement or Adjunct in sentence-initial position⁵⁶. A Complement is defined as “a nominal group that is not functioning as Subject - something that could have been a Subject but is not - as in the examples *you I blame for this, that they don’t tell us*” (Halliday 2004: 73)⁵⁷. The initial Complements “you” and “that”, in “you I blame for this” and “that they do not tell us” respectively, function as topical Themes. An Adjunct is defined as “a word or a combination of words added to a clause to give more information about time, place or manner” (Sinclair 1990: xviii)⁵⁸. An Adjunct is realized by either an adverbial group, such as “last year” in example 3.11, or a prepositional phrase, i.e. a preposition followed by a Complement, such as “until the arrival of that remittance” in example 3.12.

3.11. He sent me an invitation last year.

3.12. I am cut off from my house until the arrival of that remittance.

Adjuncts are more frequent in sentence-final position, i.e. as part of the rhematic element. However, they may occur initially as topical Themes as in the following examples⁵⁹:

3.13. Last year, he sent me an invitation.

3.14. Until the arrival of that remittance, I am cut off from my house.

There may be other elements in the clause which occur initially and precede the topical Theme. These elements are not integrated within the experiential structure of the clause and are referred to as textual and interpersonal Themes. By textual Themes, Halliday (2004) means linking devices such as conjunctions and conjunctive Adjuncts. A conjunction is defined as a word or a group of words linking together two clauses (Halliday 2004). Among the most common conjunctions are *and, or, but, then, because, although, even, in order to* and *in spite of*. According to Halliday’s model, conjunctions are “inherently thematic”, because they do not involve a fronting process,

⁵⁵ The verb, or Predicator, is regularly found as Theme in imperative clauses, such as “Turn it down”.

⁵⁶ Further discussion of Themes will be provided in section 3.4.6.

⁵⁷ It is also defined as “a noun group or adjective which comes after a link verb such as “*be*” and gives more information about the Subject or Object of the clause” (Sinclair: 1990: viv). Complements in this study are defined following Halliday.

⁵⁸ Halliday refers to this group as “circumstantial Adjuncts” to differentiate between them and other textual and interpersonal Adjuncts such as conjunctive Adjuncts and modal comment Adjuncts, which will be discussed shortly.

⁵⁹ Initial Adjuncts are considered as marked Themes (see section 3.4.6).

i.e. moving an element which does not usually occur initially into initial position⁶⁰. In other words, when present, conjunctions are always placed at the beginning of the English clause, such as *but* in the following example:

3.15. But Jean *would not join in.*

“But” in example 3.15 functions as the textual Theme, while “Jean” functions as the topical Theme. Both “but” and “Jean” constitute the whole thematic structure of the clause in the above example. Conjunctive Adjuncts cover almost the same semantic space as conjunctions and are used to relate the clause they occur in to a preceding text (Halliday 2004). Some of the most common conjunctive Adjuncts are: *in other words, to be precise, anyway, briefly, actually, moreover, however, instead, finally, likewise, therefore, nevertheless.*

By interpersonal Themes, Halliday (2004) means evaluative devices such as modal comment Adjuncts. Modal comment Adjuncts, also known as disjuncts, are defined as a word or a group of words expressing the speaker or writer’s attitude to or judgement on the content of the message as a whole or the particular speech function (Halliday 2004). Among this group of disjuncts are *unfortunately, presumably, truly, clearly, frankly, hopefully, sadly, certainly, to be honest, in fact, and of course.* Disjuncts come usually in medial position such as *unfortunately* in example 3.16. They may also occur in other locations such as the beginning of the clause, example 3.16(a), or in final position, example 3.16(b)⁶¹:

3.16. The doctor, unfortunately, *has not left an address*⁶².

3.16(a) Unfortunately, the doctor *has not left an address.*

3.16(b) The doctor *has not left an address, unfortunately.*

In the first two examples, 3.16 and 3.16(a), *unfortunately* has a thematic position, while it is part of the Rheme in example 3.16(b).

While conjunctions are “inherently thematic” elements, conjunctive Adjuncts and modal comment Adjuncts are “characteristically thematic”, i.e. they occur frequently in Theme position, but also occur in other positions in the sentence (Halliday 2004). However,

⁶⁰ See Greenbaum and Quirk (1990: 407).

⁶¹ Examples used by Halliday (2004: 131).

⁶² Themes are underlined.

both textual and interpersonal Themes are “natural Themes”, i.e. they are thematic by default as Halliday (2004: 83) indicates:

In the most general sense, they [textual and interpersonal Themes] are all natural Themes: if the speaker, or writer, is making explicit the way the clause relates to the surrounding discourse (textual), or projecting his or her own angle on the value of what the clause is saying (interpersonal), it is natural to set up such expressions as the point of departure.

According to Halliday’s definitions, topical Themes can function as full Themes. However, textual and interpersonal Themes function as part of the Theme, or part of the thematic structure of the clause. Halliday’s categorization of the thematic and informational structures will be the subject of the next section.

3.4.3. The Information Structure and the Thematic Structure

According to Halliday (1967), the functions of Theme and Rheme are distinct from those of old and new information. Unlike the Prague School approach, the Hallidayan approach considers the two structures, the thematic and the information, as separate and hence the term “the splitting approach” is used to describe his method of analysis (Fries 1981). Being at odds with each other, Halliday’s approach and the Prague School approach will produce different analyses of the same utterance. The following subsections 3.4.3.1 and 3.4.3.2 will discuss these two structures in relation to the treatment of Theme and Rheme in the clause as a message.

3.4.3.1 The Information Structure: Given and New

The information structure analyses sentence constituents in terms of Given and New information, i.e. what part of the message is presented as known or unknown. Unlike the Prague School approach, which analyses Theme and Rheme at the functional level of syntax⁶³ and as a feature of the language system, Halliday considers the information structure a feature of context. The reason is that the notion of Given and New information can only be determined by the context of situation. Halliday (1967) defines the information structure as a set of information units distributed and organized by the speaker of the utterance. Halliday (1967: 200) indicates that:

Any text in spoken English is organized into what may be called “information units”. The distribution of the discourse into information units is obligatory in the

⁶³ See section 3.3.4 on Daneš and the three-level approach.

sense that the text must consist of a sequence of such units. But it is optional in the sense that the speaker is free to decide where each information unit begins and ends, and how it is organized internally.

Any piece of discourse is necessarily comprised of units of information or message blocks. A unit of information is defined as a whole clause, less or more than a clause or a combination of the two. The distribution and organization of these information units, where a unit begins and ends, are determined by the speaker of the utterance. For instance, a sentence like *John went to the pictures yesterday* can be presented, according to the choices made by the speaker, as one, two or three units of information as follows:

3.17. //John went to the pictures yesterday//

3.17(a) //John// went to the pictures yesterday//

3.17(b) //John// went to the pictures//yesterday//

Example 3.17, where the clause is one information unit, represents the unmarked information structure, whereas the remainder are marked (Halliday 1967)⁶⁴. Chafe (1976) suggests that givenness lies in the consciousness of the addressee. In other words, Given information is what the speaker assumes to be in the consciousness of the addressee at the time of the utterance (Chafe 1976). New information is what the speaker assumes he/she is introducing to the addressee's consciousness by what he/she says (Chafe 1976). According to Baker (1992), presenting information as Given also suggests that this information is already established and agreed and thus non-negotiable. Baker (1992) also points out that Given information may be presented as New if it is unexpected or if the speaker wishes to present it in a contrastive light.

In spoken texts, units of information are realised by phonological features, such as tonality, stress and focus⁶⁵. Tonality or intonation is defined as “the distribution of the text into tone groups: one information unit is realized by one tone group” (Halliday 1967: 200). In written texts, units of information are realized by syntactic devices such as punctuation, emphasis and cleft structures⁶⁶. Punctuation can be used to indicate the distribution of information units, for instance, in defining and non-defining relative clauses as in the following two examples:

3.18. He visited his sister who lives in the UK. (defining relative clause)

⁶⁴ Markedness will be discussed shortly in section 3.4.4.

⁶⁵ Since intonation, stress and focus are mostly features of the spoken text and not the written one, the present thesis will not deal with them.

⁶⁶ Cleft structures will be discussed later in section 4.4.6.2.

3.19. He visited his sister, who lives in the UK. (non-defining relative clause)

In spoken discourse, Given information is conveyed by weak stress or low pitch, whereas New information is conveyed by strong stress or high pitch (Chafe 1976). In written discourse, elements conveying Given information are determined by their recoverability, predictability and saliency, i.e. being mentioned before. In both spoken and written discourse, elements conveying old and new information are also realized by their positions in the sentence. The most natural and common sequence of information is that of Given –New, i.e. starting with Given information, if present, towards New information⁶⁷ (Halliday 1967). At the local level of the clause, Given information is usually presented in Theme position followed by New information in Rheme position. At the global level of discourse, information presented in the headline and lead paragraphs are foreground or New information, whereas information presented last in the news report is background or old information (Khalil 2000)⁶⁸. Syntactic devices such as *kaana*, tense (past/present) and aspect (perfect/imperfect) can also determine whether the information is Given or New (Khalil 2000). Past tense, for example, can encode old information and future tense can encode New information.

Having presented the information structure according to the Hallidayan model, the following section will present the thematic structure by which Theme and Rheme are analysed.

3.4.3.2 The Thematic Structure: Theme and Rheme

Unlike the information structure, which is context-based and comprises the Given and New information units, the thematic structure, according to Halliday (1976), is text-based and comprises Theme and Rheme. Halliday (1976: 179-180) refers to the difference between the two structures as:

The two [given-new and theme-rheme] are independently variable, and derive from different sources; given-new is a discourse feature, while theme-rheme is not. The difference may be summed up in the observation that, in dialogue, “Given” means “what you were talking about” while “Theme” means “what I am talking about”; and, as is well known, the two do not necessarily coincide. Information structures the item in such a way as to relate it to the preceding discourse, while thematization structures it in a way that is independent of what has gone before.

⁶⁷ This will be further discussed in section 4.4.5.

⁶⁸ See sections 2.3.2.3 and 2.3.3.1.

While Given refers to “what you were talking about” in relation to what has gone before in the preceding context, Theme refers to “what I am talking about” “here” and “now” and has nothing to do with the previous reference. The structures involved in Theme-Rheme analysis are thus those relating to the notions of “here and “now” (Halliday 1974). Theme and Rheme are neither grammatical notions nor discursal functions, but foundation-laying and text-creating functions whose definitions are the description of their meanings (Halliday 1974). In other words, Theme and Rheme are realized by the sequence of elements and hence their definition is bound to the position each of these elements occupies in the clause. Since sentences have several thematic layers, i.e. there is usually more than one clause in the sentence, each clause, whether main or subordinate, will have its own Theme and Rheme.

Having discussed the thematic and information structures in Halliday’s functional approach, the following sections will discuss the status of sentence-initial elements, namely Subjects and Complements, in relation to unmarked and marked structures in English. Section 3.4.4 will first introduce the concept of markedness as defined by Halliday’s approach to Theme-Rheme analysis.

3.4.4 The Concept of Markedness

In order to examine the most common thematic structures and unmarked Themes in English, it is essential, first of all, to understand the notion of markedness as proposed by Halliday and his colleagues. Markedness as a concept is associated with three main aspects, namely choice, expectedness and frequency (Baker 1992). The first aspect, choice, refers to the degree of obligation an element has towards its position in the clause. In English, for example, placing an adjective in front of the noun is obligatory in the sense that an adjective can only occur before the noun it describes. Thus, the place of adjectives in the English clause is unmarked because its occurrence in this position is not a result of choice but of obligation (Baker 1992). In other words, the less choice a speaker has regarding the position of an element, the less marked and the less significant that position is. The second aspect of markedness is related to the degree of expectedness or unexpectedness an element has in a certain position. The more expected a position an element has, the less marked it is and the less significant its occurrence is. A verb Complement, for example, is most expected in sentence final position, such as *beautiful* in example 3.20. Hence, whenever a verb Complement is

sentence initial or thematic, its position is said to be more significant and marked, as in example 3.21:

3.20. Her eyes were beautiful⁶⁹. (Unmarked Theme)

3.21. Beautiful were her eyes. (Marked Theme)

The third aspect of markedness refers to the frequency with which an element occurs in a certain position and the extent of its mobility in the clause (Baker 1992). Adverbs of time and place, for example, are mobile elements which may occur initially, medially or finally. However, such adverbs are more frequent or more common in sentence-final position, as in example 3.22:

3.22. They went to the gardens yesterday. (Unmarked Theme)

The pronoun “They”, in example 3.22, functions as the unmarked Theme and the adverb, “yesterday” functions as part of the Rheme. If, for instance, an adverb occupies the first position in the sentence, i.e. the Theme, the position it occupies is said to be marked and more meaningful, such as *yesterday* in example 3.23:

3.23. Yesterday, they went to the gardens. (Marked Theme)

Having identified the meaning of markedness, the next section will discuss the concept of markedness in relation to Theme-Rheme analysis in Halliday’s model as well as its relation to the three types of mood system in the English clause.

3.4.5 Unmarked Thematic Structure: Theme and Mood

Unmarked structures in English can be signalled by the mood system of the clause. English has three main types of mood: declarative, interrogative and imperative (Halliday 2004). In the first mood system, a declarative clause, the typical pattern or the unmarked thematic structure is signalled by a Subject in Theme position (Halliday 2004). A Subject functioning as a Theme can be realized by a pronoun, such as *I* in example 3.24, a nominal group with a proper noun or common noun as Head, such as *London bridge* in example 3.25, or nominalization⁷⁰ as in example 3.26:

3.24. I had a little nut-tree⁷¹.

⁶⁹ This example is used by Baker (1992: 130).

⁷⁰ Nominalization is a procedure “whereby any element or group of elements are made to function as a nominal group in the clause” (Halliday 2004: 69).

⁷¹ Examples provided by Halliday (2004: 72).

- 3.25. London bridge *is falling down*.
- 3.26. What I want *is a proper cup of coffee*.

Any variations of this type of clause are thus marked structures in Halliday's model. In other words, in a declarative clause, a Theme which is something other than the Subject is a marked Theme (Halliday 2004); this will be further discussed in section 3.4.6. In the second mood, the interrogative, the unmarked Theme is defined according to the type of question the speaker wants to ask. In English, there are two main types of questions, the polarity, or yes/no, interrogative and WH-question (Halliday 2004). In a yes/no interrogative, the speaker requires a yes/no answer as in the following examples:

- 3.27. Can you *keep a secret?*
- 3.28. Is anyone *at home?*

The element that embodies the meaning of polarity, i.e. the finite verbal operator, as in *Can* and *Is*, in examples 3.27 and 3.28 respectively, functions as the unmarked Theme. When a Finite verbal operator, such as *be*, *can* or *do*, is, or is part of, a nominal group, the Theme extends over the Subject, as in Can you *keep a secret?*, where the verb and the Subject, Can you, functions as the Theme (Halliday 2004). In the wh-question, the speaker wants to know about a missing piece of information, like what, who, which, where, when or why as in the following examples:

- 3.29. Who *will you take as your partner?*
- 3.30. Where *has my little dog gone?*⁷²

The element which requests the specific information, such as *Who* and *Where* in examples 3.29 and 3.30 respectively, functions as the unmarked Theme. However, if the wh- word is, or is part of, a nominal group, this nominal group may function as Theme. For instance, the nominal groups, *Which house* in 3.31, which is a Complement in a prepositional phrase, and *How long* in 3.32, which is a Complement in an adverbial phrase, function as the Themes of the interrogative clauses:

- 3.31. Which house *do you live in?*⁷³
- 3.32. How long *did she wait for?*

⁷² Examples 32, 34, 35 and 36 are from Halliday (2004: 75).

⁷³ An example by Halliday (2004: 76).

Finally, in the imperative mood the unmarked Theme is conveyed by the Predicator (verb), *keep*, *Do not* and *Let us*, which comes first in the clause, as in the following examples:

- 3.33. Keep *quiet!*
 3.34. Do not *do that.*
 3.35. Let us *do lunch at the Ivy.*

However, if the Subject of the imperative clause is made explicit as a Theme, then the Theme is clearly that of a marked choice, such as *You* in *You keep quiet!* where *You* functions as the Theme and *keep quiet* as the Rheme. The unmarked Theme patterns in the mood system of the English clause are summarized in Table 3.2⁷⁴.

| Mood | Typical (unmarked) Theme |
|-----------------------|---|
| Declarative | Nominal group functioning as Subject |
| Interrogative: yes/no | First word (finite operator) of verbal group plus nominal group functioning as Subject |
| Interrogative: wh- | Nominal group, adverbial group or prepositional phrase functioning as interrogative wh- element |
| Imperative | Verbal group functioning as Predicator |

Table 3.2 Mood Type and Unmarked Theme Selection

Table 3.2 shows that a given type of clause in a specific mood system in English represents the typical Theme. Any variations would result in a marked thematic structure. However, changing the typical positioning of elements can sometimes be achieved without changing the unmarked structure of the clause itself (Baker 1992). An example of the unmarked choice of Theme in English is the passive construction which allows the speaker/writer to place an element other than the Subject in Theme position, as in examples 3.36, 3.37 and 3.38⁷⁵.

- 3.36. The duke *gave my aunt that teapot.* (Active)
 3.37. My aunt *was given that teapot by the duke.* (Passive voice)
 3.38. That teapot *was given to my aunt by the duke.* (Passive voice)

⁷⁴ Adopted from Halliday (2004: 78).

⁷⁵ Examples from Halliday (2004: 66).

Having presented the unmarked thematic structures in relation to the mood system in English, the following section will focus on marked Themes.

3.4.6 Marked Thematic Structures

According to Halliday (2004), the element which is typically chosen as Theme in the clause depends on the choice of mood (section 3.4.5). There is a strong tendency for speakers to choose the unmarked form corresponding to the choice of mood. Hence elements in initial position other than the ones identified in Table 3.2 (section 3.4.5) represent marked choices of Theme. In a polarity interrogative mood, the unmarked Theme is the finite operator (can, has, do or be) plus the nominal group functioning as the Subject (section 3.4.5). When other elements come first in a polarity interrogative clause, they constitute a marked choice of Theme, as shown in the following examples⁷⁶:

3.39. On the right *is it?*

3.40. “The barge she sat in”, *do you remember that passage in the Waste Land?*

The adverbial phrase, “on the right”, in example 3.39, functions as a marked Theme in the polarity interrogative clause, whereas the finite operator, “is”, and the Subject, “it”, function as the Rheme. In example 3.40, the nominal phrase, “the barge she sat in”, functions as a marked Theme in the polarity interrogative clause, whereas the finite operator, “do”, the Subject, “you” and the Complement “that passage in the Waste Land” function as the Rheme. In a wh-interrogative mood, the unmarked Theme is the nominal, adverbial or prepositional phrase functioning as the interrogative (wh-) element (section 3.4.5). Hence other elements in Theme position are considered marked, as illustrated in the following example⁷⁷:

3.41. Aesthetically, in terms of the vision in your head, *what is the relationship between the fiction and the non-fiction?*

The adverbial phrase, “aesthetically, in terms of the vision in your head”, functions as a marked Theme in the wh-interrogative clause (example 3.41). The Rheme, in example 3.41, consists of the wh-element, “what”, the verb, “is” and the Complement “the relationship between the fiction and the non-fiction”.

⁷⁶ Examples are from Halliday (2004: 77).

⁷⁷ Example is from Halliday (2004: 77).

In the imperative mood, the unmarked choice of Theme is the verbal group functioning as the Predicator⁷⁸. However, when the Subject is made explicit in an imperative clause, it functions as the Theme and is clearly a marked choice. Halliday (2004: 77) uses the following example:

3.42. You take the office.

In example 3.42, Halliday considers the verb, “take” and the Complement, “the office”, as the Rheme, whereas the explicit Subject of the imperative clause, “you”, as the marked Theme. Another example of a marked Theme is the use of an explicit “you” with negative imperatives, as shown in example 3.43:

3.43. Don't you argue with me.⁷⁹

The negation element, “don't”, and the explicit Subject, “you”, in example 3.43, function as the marked Theme, whereas the verb, “argue”, functions as part of the Rheme in the imperative clause above.

The third mood is the declarative clause which typically has a Subject in initial position and thus functions as unmarked Theme. According to Halliday (2004), marked Themes in English declarative clauses are signalled by elements other than the Subject in Theme position. Marked Themes in declarative clauses are of three main types⁸⁰: fronted Themes, predicated Themes and identifying Themes (Halliday 2004 and Baker 1992). These three types are presented below in respect of the degree of markedness each type has, i.e. starting from the least marked, the fronted Theme, towards the most marked, the identifying Theme.

3.4.6.1 Fronted Theme

The least marked type of marked Theme in English declarative clauses is the fronted Theme. According to Greenbaum and Quirk (1990), the fronting process involves moving elements, which do not usually occur initially in the sentence, into Theme

⁷⁸ The terms *verb* and *verb phrase* can be ambiguous, meaning either the functional constituent (verb, Complement, Subject, Adjunct) or the formal category (verb, noun, adjective, adverb). Therefore, some linguists, like Halliday, use the term *predicator* to refer to *verb* in its functional relation to the clause.

⁷⁹ This example is from Halliday (2004: 77).

⁸⁰ See Young (1980) for the discussion of other types of marked Themes in informal English such as “preposed Theme” and “postposed Theme”.

position in order to achieve a marked thematic structure⁸¹. These elements include circumstantial Adjuncts⁸², Complements and Predicators (verbs). The degree of markedness expressed by the fronted element is measured according to the mobility of that element in the clause, i.e. the more mobile an element is, the less marked it will be in Theme position (Halliday 2004, Baker 1992). In this sense, fronted Complements are much more marked than fronted Adjuncts because the position of Complements in the sentence is rather more restricted. Moreover, fronted Predicators, or verbs, are the most marked of all thematic choices in English, as they are very rare to find, e.g. the verb “publicize” in the following example:

3.44. They promised to publicize the book in China, and publicize it they did⁸³.

Categories of fronted Themes in English are listed in Table 3.3, starting from the least marked toward the most marked, along with relevant examples.

| Marked Thematic Structure | Type of Fronted Theme |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <u>Today</u> , he arrived | Adjunct: Adverb of time |
| <u>Everywhere</u> we looked | Adjunct: Adverb of place |
| <u>Often</u> , they go to the cinema | Adjunct: Adverb of frequency |
| <u>Quickly</u> , she went off | Adjunct: Adverb of manner |
| <u>In the corner</u> , she waited | Adjunct: prepositional phrase |
| <u>You</u> I blame | Complement |
| <u>and publicize it</u> they did | Predicator |

Table 3.3 Fronted Themes in English⁸⁴

According to Halliday (2004), when Adjuncts or Complements occur initially, i.e. in Theme position, they either express some kind of setting, such as adverbs of place or time, or express contrast, like verb Complements. Complements or Adjuncts, which would have been part of the Rheme in the unmarked structure, become part of the Theme of the marked choice. For instance, the Subject *I* which was the Theme of the unmarked structure in example 3.45 becomes part of the Rheme in the marked structure in example 3.46:

⁸¹ Note that since conjunctions are Thematic by default, i.e. they do not involve a fronting process, conjunctions are always unmarked Themes (see section 3.4.4).

⁸² Circumstantial Adjuncts are those representing part of the experiential meaning of the clause and are referred to in this study as Adjuncts.

⁸³ Baker (1992: 134).

⁸⁴ adapted from Halliday (2004: 74).

- 3.45. I blame you. (Subject as unmarked Theme)
 3.46. You I blame. (Complement as marked Theme)

This has also been indicated by Baker (1990). According to her (1990: 134),

Objects and complements are not usually fronted to provide a point of orientation or method of development for a stretch of language. The effect of thematizing an object or complement in English is to provide contrast and to emphasize the speaker's attitude to the message.

3.4.6.2 Predicated Theme

The second type of marked Theme, which is more marked than the fronted Theme and less marked than the identifying Theme, is the predicated Theme. According to Collins (1991)⁸⁵, predicating an element involves foregrounding it by placing it initially using a cleft structure, or an it-structure, as in examples 3.48, 3.49 and 3.50.

- 3.47. The book received a great deal of publicity in China⁸⁶. (Unmarked Theme)
 3.48. It was the book that received a great deal of publicity.
 3.49. It was in China that the book received a great deal of publicity.
 3.50. It was a great deal of publicity that the book received.

The purpose of using a cleft structure is to allow the speaker/writer to highlight or focus on an element such as the Subject of a declarative clause, which is normally unmarked in Theme position and turn it into a marked Theme (Halliday 2004). The element which receives most stress and informational focus, in a cleft structure, is the element which comes after *it* and the verb to be, i.e. *the book* (example 3.48), *in China* (example 3.49) and *a great deal of publicity* (example 3.50). In order to avoid any confusion with Halliday's use of the term "focus", Collins (1991: 2) refers to the stressed element in a cleft structure as the "highlighted element". Predicated Themes, whether a Subject, *the book* (example 3.48), a prepositional phrase, *in China* (example 3.49), or a Complement, *a great deal of publicity* (example 3.50), become strongly foregrounded and mostly associated with New information. The predicated Theme is usually associated with the meaning of contrast, for example, It was in China where the book received a great deal of publicity, and not in the UK. The meaning of a cleft structure becomes something like "take special note" or "this is contrary to expectation" (Halliday 2004: 95). It should be noted that sentences such as *It was his teacher who*

⁸⁵ See Collins (1991) for more information about cleft and pseudo-cleft constructions.

⁸⁶ An examples used by Baker (1992: 132).

persuaded him to continue, consist of several thematic and rhematic layers. These layers are illustrated in Table 3.4⁸⁷.

| | | | |
|-------|-----------------|-------|---------------------------|
| It | was his teacher | who | persuaded him to continue |
| Theme | Rheme | Theme | Rheme |
| Theme | | Rheme | |

Table 3.4 Thematic Structure of Clause with Predicated Theme

However, due to the limitations of space and for reasons discussed later in section 4.4, this research will only focus on the higher layer of Theme-Rheme structure, namely the main clause, i.e. “It was his teacher” as the Theme and “*who persuaded him to continue*” as the Rheme.

3.4.6.3 Identifying Theme

The last and most marked type of Theme, the identifying Theme, is similar to the predicated Theme in the sense that in both structures elements in Theme position receive much more focus and prominence than other elements (Baker 1990). However, there are two main differences between predicated Themes and identifying Themes. The first difference relates to the information structure of the two clauses. While in a predicated Theme the thematic element is presented as New information, in an identifying Theme the thematic element is presented as the old information (Halliday 2004). The second difference relates to the structure of the clause itself. Unlike the predicated Theme which uses an it-structure in Theme position, the identifying Theme, also referred to by Halliday (2004) as the thematic equative, uses a wh-structure or a pseudo-cleft sentence in Theme position. Halliday (2004: 70) defines the thematic equative as:

A thematic equative... is an identifying clause which has a thematic nominalization in it. Its function is to express the Theme-Rheme structure in such a way as to allow for the Theme to consist of any subset of the elements of the clause.

To put it differently, the identifying Theme is realized by an identifying clause placed in Theme position, whose function is to thematize and foreground any element in the

⁸⁷ Halliday’s (2004: 97) example.

clause by means of nominalization. Examples of identifying Themes in English are illustrated in Table 3.5⁸⁸.

| Theme | Rheme |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| What the duke gave to my aunt | was that teapot |
| The one who gave my aunt that teapot | was the duke |
| The one the duke gave that teapot to | was my aunt |
| What the duke did with that teapot | was give it to my aunt |
| How my aunt came by that teapot | was she was given it by the duke |

Table 3.5 Thematic Equative

According to Halliday (2004), the identifying Theme “identifies” and “specifies” what the Theme is and “equates” it with the Rheme, i.e. it sets up a structure where Theme (What the duke gave to my aunt) = Rheme (*was that teapot*); hence the term the “thematic equative” is used by Halliday to identify this kind of clause. Moreover, an identifying Theme expresses the semantic feature of exclusiveness where the meaning of the Theme is “this” and “only this”, as in “What the duke gave to my aunt *was the teapot and nothing else*”.

Having discussed the unmarked and marked Themes in English declarative clauses, section 3.4.7 will present some of the attempts to apply Halliday’s model to other languages.

3.4.7 Halliday’s Approach in Other Languages

Halliday’s approach to Theme-Rheme analysis has been applied to languages other than English, e.g. French, Spanish and Japanese. Applying Halliday’s model to French is similar to English, since both languages have similar clause structures, i.e. the normal sequence of sentence elements in both languages is Subject-verb-Complement-Adjunct. As in English, Themes in French consist of one of the experiential elements of the clause, topical Theme, and may, or may not, consist of interpersonal and textual Themes. There is also another type of Theme called the “absolute” Theme. An “absolute” Theme receives more prominence and stress than textual, interpersonal and topical Themes and is thus considered marked. It is typically distinguished in writing

⁸⁸ Halliday’s (2004: 69) examples.

by a comma and placed either at the beginning or at the end of the French clause (Caffarel 2006). An example of an absolute Theme in French is “my mother” in example 3.51.

3.51. Ma mère, *elle a toujours fait du pot-au-feu.*⁸⁹

My mother, *she always made a stew.*

In the unmarked French structure, Theme is usually associated with the Subject of the sentence and Rheme with the process and circumstances (Caffarel 2006). In the unmarked information structure, New information typically falls at the end of utterance. In written French texts, the sequence Given-New normally correlates with the unmarked thematic structure. In other words, Given information usually maps onto the Theme and New information maps onto the Rheme.

Halliday’s approach has also been applied to Spanish (McCabe 1999 and Munday 1997). Spanish, like English, is basically a SVO language, i.e. the Theme will most often be conflated with the Subject of the clause (Teskey 1976). A simple Theme in Spanish consists of some experiential element, a participant, a process or a circumstance. Spanish also has predicated Themes and thematic equatives⁹⁰ (McCabe 1999). However, unlike English, Spanish has a freer word order which allows for verb-initial constructions in various contexts. One is when a verb of a subsequent clause refers to the Subject of a previous clause. In this situation, it is obligatory to pro-drop the Subject, the pronoun (McCabe 1999). The inclusion of the Subject in this case is considered highly marked in Spanish. There are also other cases of verb-initial constructions in Spanish. These are inversion (Hatcher 1956) and impersonal constructions (Alarcos Llorach 1994). Inversion, as the name implies, consists of a verb-initial construction followed by the Subject. Subject-verb inversion is considered unmarked with certain verbs in Spanish, e.g. existential verbs⁹¹. Impersonal verbs do not allow for the inclusion of an explicit Subject in Spanish. These include verbs which refer to meteorological phenomena such as *Llueve* (It is raining), *Ha nevado* (It has snowed). Impersonal constructions are unmarked in Spanish (McCabe 1999). In her study of Spanish and English history textbooks, McCabe (1999) suggests that verbs, and not its elided Subject, are analysed as Theme. Munday (1997) also applies Halliday’s

⁸⁹ Example by Caffarel (2006: 173).

⁹⁰ See section 3.4.6.

⁹¹ Existential clauses typically have the verb *be* and contain a distinct circumstantial element of time or place, as in *there was a picture on the wall* (Halliday 2004).

approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Spanish. In his study on English and Spanish translation, Munday (1997) considers the elided subject pronoun in Spanish as the Theme of the clause. This is because if he analyses the verb as Theme, there would be different Thematic Progression patterns for the source and target texts which he analyses due to the syntactic difference between Spanish and English⁹².

Halliday's approach has also been applied to non-European languages such as Japanese. Japanese benefits from a segmental marking system to indicate thematic elements (Teruya 2006). In addition to initial position, thematic elements in Japanese clauses are signalled by overt thematic markers, such as *wa*. In Japanese unmarked structures, a Theme usually comprises two experiential components, namely circumstantial Adjunct and Subject. The reason is that Adjuncts in Japanese are thematic by default, i.e. they usually occur initially in the sentence⁹³, as in the following example:

- 3.52. [Yesterday I went to Kyoozan] ⁹⁴. (Translated literally from Japanese)
I went to Kyoozan yesterday.

The temporal Adjunct “yesterday” as well as the Subject “I” represent unmarked thematic elements in sentence 3.52. Like French, Japanese sentences may consist of absolute Themes, such as “many animals” in example 3.53.

- 3.53. [Many animals **dewa**, the difference between male and female is observable in individuals.]⁹⁵

An “absolute Theme”, is defined as “a contextualizing element for the clause as a message that is realized by a nominal group highlighted by “*dewa*” (Teruya 2006: 94). Absolute Themes in Japanese may occur initially or finally and are considered as marked types of Themes. Moreover, Japanese deploys segmental marking in writing to highlight Given and New information (Teruya 2006). The overt thematic marker “*wa*”, for instance, indicates Given information, and thus an unmarked information structure, while the overt marker “*ga*” indicates New information in Theme position and thus a marked information structure.

⁹² For similar reasons, this research will consider initial verbs in Arabic as part of Theme, as will be discussed later in Chapter 4.

⁹³ This reason is considered in adopting Halliday's model in Arabic, as will be discussed in section 4.3.

⁹⁴ An example from Teruya (2006: 77).

⁹⁵ Example from Teruya (2006: 95).

Up till now, there have been no attempts to apply Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic texts. The next section will present a brief summary and concluding remarks on Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis.

3.4.8 Concluding Remarks

This section has presented a detailed discussion of Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in English. Halliday (2004) differentiates between the information system, i.e. the presentation of Given and New information, and the thematic system, where Theme and Rheme are defined. According to Halliday (2004), Theme and Rheme function as text-creating elements and are defined according to their positions in the sentence. The thematic function, or initial position, is regarded by Halliday as meaningful in the construction of the clause as a message. The information system is a feature of context. It is also one of the resources which the speaker of English has at his/her disposal in organizing the clause as a message. Given and New information are defined as what is presented by the speaker/writer as recoverable (Given) or not recoverable (New) to the listener/reader. However, what is treated as Given may not always be previously mentioned. It may be something that the speaker/writer wants to present as recoverable for rhetorical purposes (section 3.4.2.1). Similarly, what is treated as New may be something unexpected, whether it is mentioned before or not. The interplay of these two structures in Halliday's approach helps to relate discourse to its sociocultural environment. In his words:

Within any given scenario, or set of contextual conditions, the speaker can exploit the potential that the situation defines, using thematic and information structures to produce an astonishing variety of rhetorical effects. He can play with the system, so to speak. A very frequent type of linguistic-game playing is the use of these two systems to achieve complex manoeuvres of putting the other down, making him feel guilty and the like. (Halliday 2004: 93)

The thematic and information systems in language can be exploited by the speakers/writers in order to assign a specific meaning, or interpretation, to a certain social situation and project a particular viewpoint, especially at the level of text, or discourse. In other words, Halliday's model is geared to the study of language as communication and seeing meaning in the writer's linguistic choices, e.g. Theme and Rheme distinction, and relating these choices to a wider sociocultural framework of language. This is what is intended by Halliday's formulation of "language as social semiotic". In his words, "language as social semiotic ... means interpreting language

within a sociocultural context, in which the culture itself is interpreted in semiotic terms – as an information system” (Halliday 1978: 2). Language as social semiotic is a resource people use to accomplish their purposes by expressing meanings in context - not in the sense of a system of signs, but a systemic resource for meaning in social context, or what Halliday terms as “meaning potential” (Halliday 1987).

This section also discussed the notion of markedness and unmarked thematic structures in English, as well as the status of sentence-initial elements, namely textual, interpersonal and topical Themes. Three main types of marked Theme in English have been identified as a means of foregrounding and focusing certain elements in declarative clauses, namely fronted Theme, predicated Theme and identifying Theme. Having discussed the FSP approach and Halliday’s Systemic Functional Linguistics relevant to the analysis of Theme and Rheme in English, the next section will discuss Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic as presented by Traditional Arab Grammarians.

3.5 The Approach of Traditional Arab Grammarians to Theme-Rheme Analysis

This section will present the traditional approach adopted by Arab grammarians to Theme-Rheme analysis in Classical Arabic (CA), which is the unchanged medieval variety of Arabic used in the Quran, the Holy Book of Islam. Section 3.5.1 will discuss the structure of Classical Arabic and the main differences between Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences. A discussion of the unmarked type of sentence will be presented in relation to text types⁹⁶ in Arabic followed by a discussion of the status of sentence-initial elements in the Arabic clause as defined by Traditional Arab Grammarians (TAGs)⁹⁷. The final section (3.5.4) will present some critical views of the TAGs’ approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Classical Arabic.

3.5.1 The Structure of the Arabic Language: the Verbal Sentence and the Nominal Sentence

Unlike English, Arabic has a relatively free word order which permits different elements, verb, Subject, Complement and Adjunct, to occupy different positions in the sentence (Abdul-Raof 1998). This is mainly due to the fact that Arabic has an inflection

⁹⁶ see section 2.3.2.1 for definition of text types.

⁹⁷ Basra School and Kufa School grammarians.

or case marking system which helps to clarify the syntactical relations between sentence elements, regardless of their positions. Since Theme and Rheme are considered by Traditional Arab Grammarians as attributes of declarative sentences, rather than interrogative and imperative, this section is confined to the study of the declarative mood system in the structure of Classical Arabic. Arabic declarative sentences are normally of two types: Verbal sentences and Nominal sentences (Aziz 1988). The former contains an initial verbal element (V) in its predication and has the pattern V+S+O (verb + Subject + object):

3.54. كتب صديقي رسالة.

Gloss: [Wrote my friend a letter.]

Idiomatic Translation⁹⁸: My friend wrote a letter.

The second type, the Nominal sentence, consists of an initial noun functioning as a Subject followed by a Complement (C), mostly an adjective, as in example 3.55:

3.55. أحمد كسول.

[Ahmad lazy]

Ahmad is lazy.

Nominal sentences such as (3.55) which comprise a Subject and a Complement have no verbal element and are similar in structure to equative sentences (see section 3.4.6.3) and are referred to as such (Abdul-Raof 1998). Nominal equative sentences are different from Verbal sentences in that they contain no copular verb, *be*, when there is no indication of particular time (Aziz 1988). However, a form of the empty verb “kaana” or one of its so-called “sisters” in Arabic, *كان و أخواتها*, may be used to indicate the past, as in example 3.56, or to indicate the future if it is prefixed by the future morpheme “seen” (*س*), as in example 3.57:

3.56. كان أحمد كسولاً.

[*Kaana* Ahmad lazy]

Ahmad *was* lazy.

3.57. سيكون أحمد مهندساً.

[*Will be* Ahmad an engineer]

Ahmad *will be* an engineer.

⁹⁸ The same techniques of presenting the gloss and the idiomatic translations of the Arabic examples will be followed in this chapter. .

The verb “kaana”, which is italicized in 3.56, can be compared in English to the verb “was” and سيكون to “will be” in 3.57. In this case, the Arabic sentence is still considered Nominal and not Verbal.

Nominal sentences can also consist of a Subject followed by a lexical verb as in the following example:

3.58. الطلاب يكتبون الوظيفة

[The students write the homework.]

The students are writing the homework.

Arabic Nominal sentences which have a lexical verb as in example 3.58 are similar in structure to English declarative sentences. In fact what distinguishes Nominal sentences and Verbal sentences in Arabic is not the presence of a verb but the class of the initial element, i.e. whether a Subject or a verb respectively.

According to Arab linguists, Verbal and Nominal sentences are used differently in Arabic. Wright (1974: 251) indicates that:

The difference between verbal and nominal sentences, to which the native grammarians attach no small importance, is properly this, that the former relates an act or event, the latter gives a description of a person or thing, either absolutely, or in the form of a clause descriptive of a state.

In other words, while Arabic speakers use verb-initial sentences to relate events and actions, Nominal sentences are used to describe people and objects. Although Arabic uses both verb-initial (Verbal sentences) and noun-initial (Nominal) sentences, Classical or Traditional Arab Grammarians (TAGs), such as Al-Jarim (1953), Keenan (1978) and Wright (1974), consider Arabic as a verb-initial language⁹⁹, i.e. Arabic speakers prefer to start the sentence with a verb rather than with a noun. Al-Jarim (1953: 347) notes that “the verbal sentence is the basis of expression in Arabic”. To be more specific, Verbal sentences with the sequence verb + Subject + Complement + Adjunct display the normal and most common syntactic order in Arabic. According to TAGs, four main criteria form the basis of this tenet: frequency, neutrality, ambiguity and interrogatives (Abdul-Raof 1998). The first criterion, frequency, refers to the degree to which a certain element, or constituent, occurs in initial position in Arabic sentences. Following the study by Abdu (1983) on the structure of the Arabic language, it seems that verbs

⁹⁹ Hawkins (1983) claims that verb-initial languages are a minority and constitute no more than 10 percent of the total number of languages in the world.

most frequently occur in sentence-initial position in Arabic. In other words, Verbal sentences have the higher frequency of occurrence in Arabic. The second criterion, neutrality, refers to the degree of stress or emphasis carried by a certain order of elements. The more neutral a word order is, the less stress it has and the less emphatic it is. Neutrality is also defined by Halliday (1970) as the word order which is unmarked for focus, emphasis or information distribution. According to Arab linguists, Kamel (1982) and Abdu (1983), Arabic Verbal sentences show no intonational peak or stress on any specific element and thus are the most unemphatic clause type¹⁰⁰. The third criterion, ambiguity, refers to the state where case markers are no longer available to distinguish, for instance, a Subject from an object. Subjects are normally inflected by the nominative case marker ('), and objects are inflected by the accusative marker (◌). According to Arab grammarians, nouns ending with long vowels¹⁰¹, like the proper nouns "Mustafa" and "Musa" (Moses), are syntactically incapable of displaying case markers in Arabic, as illustrated in example 3.59:

3.59. رأى مصطفى موسى¹⁰²
 [Saw Mustafa Musa]
 Mustafa saw Musa.

Due to the absence of the nominative and accusative case markers on both nouns, the syntactic relations in example 3.59 are obscured, i.e. the sentence can be interpreted either as "Mustafa saw Moses" or "Moses saw Mustafa". In cases of ambiguity, Arab grammarians as well as Arabic speakers always presume that the noun which immediately follows the verb, i.e. "Mustafa" in example 3.59, functions as the Subject. As Abdul-Raof (1998: 52) states, "where ambiguity threatens, the basic order is required". In other words, the sequence verb + Subject + object is considered as the basic and the most common word order in Arabic. The last criterion to determine the basicness of the Verbal sentence in Arabic is the interrogative mood system. Arab grammarians claim that in the interrogative mood Arabic always favours a Verbal sentence after the interrogative word rather than a Nominal one, as in example 3.60:

3.60. أين رحل الملك؟
 [Where went the king?]
 Where did the king go?

¹⁰⁰ Equative sentences in Arabic, i.e. non-Verbal Nominal sentences with the structure Subject + Complement are also considered to display neutral and unmarked word order as in examples (4.5.2.)

¹⁰¹ Also known as quiescent letters such as the phonetic sound (i:) or (a:).

¹⁰² An example used by Abdul-Raof (1998: 52).

However, the analysis provided by TAGs to determine the unmarkedness of Arabic Verbal sentences has been criticized for being sentence-based (Abdul-Raof 1998). The analysis of the Arabic sentence had not been objectively tested and substantiated at a textual and contextual level until the work of Parkinson (1981). Parkinson (1981), as well as Abdul-Raof (1998), carried out a wide-ranging analysis of Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences taking into account the criterion of genre¹⁰³. According to them, Verbal and Nominal sentences are used differently in different genres. On the one hand, Verbal sentences are more commonly used in news reports and storytelling because the function of Verbal sentences is to relate events and actions¹⁰⁴. On the other hand, Nominal sentences are more commonly used in editorials, book reviews and novels, because their function is to describe people and objects. Hatim (1989) also notes that the choice between Verbal and Nominal sentences in Arabic is closely bound up with text types¹⁰⁵ and text functions, i.e. the interaction between message, producer and receiver. In his words:

Our conclusions point to the fact that the choice [between Verbal and Nominal clause types in Arabic] is ultimately related to text-type. The verbal clause structure tends to predominate in non-evaluative, expository texts, while the Nominal structure is typically of evaluative, argumentative texts. (1989: 144)

To put it differently, in order to determine the basic sentence type in Arabic written texts, genres and text types should be taken into account. Since one of the main concerns of this thesis is to analyse Theme and Rheme patterns in Arabic expository texts, news reports, the Verbal sentence is likely to predominate in the data selected for the purpose of analysis.

The next section (3.5.2) will discuss the traditional approach to Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic as adopted by Traditional Arab Grammarians.

3.5.2 The Traditional Treatment of Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic

In Classical Arabic, also known as Fussha العربية الفصحى, the concept of Theme and Rheme are linked to the two parts of the Nominal clause known as مبتدأ (mubtada') and خبر (khabar) respectively (Abdul-Raof 1998). This means that Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic are aspects of Nominal sentences but not Verbal Sentences.

¹⁰³ See section 2.2.2.2 for the definition of genre.

¹⁰⁴ Wright (1974).

¹⁰⁵ See section 2.3.2.1 for discussion of text types.

Traditional Arab Grammarians define the term *mubtada'*, which means “inchoative”, or “that with which a beginning is made”, as an overt pre-verbal noun which displays the nominative case marker (ُ)¹⁰⁶, controls gender, number and person of the verbal suffix and takes over sentence-initial position¹⁰⁷ (Wright 1986: 251). They define the term *khabar*, or Rheme, which means “enunciative” or “announcement to the inchoative”, as whatever comes after the *mubtada'* (Wright 1986: 251). In other words, the term *mubtada'*, or Theme, is used by TAGs to refer to the Subject in sentence-initial position and *khabar* to the following element(s), namely a verb, a Complement or/and an Adjunct. For instance, the underlined noun phrase, “Waleed”, in example 3.61 is seen to function as the Theme, *mubtada'*, while “in Beirut” is seen to function as the Rheme, *khabar*, in Classical Arabic.

- 3.61. وليد في بيروت
 [Waleed in Beirut]
 Waleed is in Beirut.

Theme in Classical Arabic can also be realized by a pronoun, such as “He” in example 3.62, or a compound nominal phrase, such as “Zayd and Omar” in example 3.63, (Cantarino 1974):

- 3.62. هو حكيم
 [He wise]
 He is wise.

- 3.63. زيد و عمر في الحديقة
 [Zayd and Omar in the garden]
 Zayd and Omar are in the garden.

Khabar, or Rheme, in Classical Arabic is realized by a an adjective in the nominative case, such as “wise” in example 3.62 above, a verbal phrase, such as “condemns the assassination” in example 3.64, a prepositional phrase, such as “in the garden” in example 3.63 or an adverbial phrase, such as “here” in example 3.65:

- 3.64. ¹⁰⁸ سوريا تدين حادثة الاغتيال
 [Syria condemn-it the accident of the assassination]

¹⁰⁶ Except when preceded by quasi-verbal letters, e.g. “inna” and its “sisters” as it is called in Arabic. In this particular case, *mubtada'* displays the accusative case marker (َ).

¹⁰⁷ A definition by Basra School grammarians.

¹⁰⁸ The headline of the *Alarab* online report on 14/06/2007 on the assassination of Waleed Eido, a Lebanese MP.

Syria *condemns the assassination.*

- 3.65. زيدٌ هنا
[Zayd here]
Zayd is here.

According to Arab grammarians, the noun phrase functioning as *mubtada'* should always be definite in initial position (Moutaouakil 1989). Definiteness in Classical Arabic is determined by the use of proper nouns, such as “Zayd” in example 3.65, the definite article *ال*, i.e. “the”, such as “The man” in example 3.66, “referentiality”, i.e. recoverability from the situational context, such as “The young man” in the second sentence in example 3.67, and the addition of a genitive noun¹⁰⁹, such as “Gulf” in example 3.68 (Moutaouakil 1989).

- 3.66. الرجل كريم
[The man generous]
The man is generous.

- 3.67. رأيت شاباً في القهوة. الشاب كان يريد مساعدتي¹¹⁰
[Saw I a young man in the café. The young man wanted to help me]
I saw a young man in the café. The young man wanted to help me.

- 3.68. بحر الخليج دافئ
[The gulf sea warm]
The gulf sea is warm.

However, Themes in Classical Arabic are rhematized, i.e. brought into sentence-final position, when they are no longer definite, hence called “delayed Theme” مبتدأ مؤخر (Moutaouakil 1989). Although the terms *mubtada'* and Subject seem to assume similar functions in Arabic Nominal sentences, TAGs distinguish between the two in terms of their relation to the verbal element in the sentence. They define the *mubtada'* as the nominal constituents which occur pre-verbally in Nominal sentences, whereas the nominal constituents which occur post-verbally are assigned the function Subject or “Faa‘il”. In other words, TAGs consider Theme and Rheme, like the Subject, to be

¹⁰⁹ A genitive noun is a noun modifying another noun, as in “John’s mother”, “the map of Britain” and “the car door”.

¹¹⁰ According to TAGs, the first sentence in example 3.67 is Verbal with no Theme and Rheme.

grammatical or morpho-syntactic notions (Abdul-Raof 1998). Having defined Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic, the next section will examine the status of other sentence-initial elements in Nominal sentences, namely conjuncts, disjuncts and Adjuncts¹¹¹, as perceived by Traditional Arab Grammarians.

3.5.3 Conjuncts, Disjuncts and Adjuncts

Conjuncts (conjunctions and conjunctive Adjuncts) and disjuncts, or what Halliday (2004) terms as modal common Adjuncts, are defined similarly in Arabic and English. Conjuncts حروف الإضافة are defined as connective devices that link together two words, clauses or paragraphs (see section 3.4.2). Some of the conjuncts in Arabic are:

و، أو، لكن، ثم، على أية حال، أيضاً، إضافة إلى ذلك، لأن

And, or, but, then, anyway, furthermore, in addition to and because

A disjunct is defined as an evaluative device which expresses the attitude of the speaker/writer to the form or content of the communicative event (section 3.4.2). The most common disjuncts in Arabic are:

لا شك أنه، بصراحة، باختصار، في الحقيقة، و من جهة أخرى، من الغريب حقاً

Undoubtedly, frankly, briefly, in fact, on the other hand and strangely

As in English, it is very common in Arabic to place conjuncts and disjuncts in sentence-initial position (Abdul-Raof 1998). However, conjuncts and disjuncts are treated differently in Arabic and English. While conjuncts and disjuncts, in the view of Halliday (2004), comprise part of the thematic structure of the English clause, i.e. conjuncts as textual Themes and disjuncts as interpersonal Themes (see section 3.4.2.), conjuncts and disjuncts, in the view of Traditional Arab Grammarians, are not integrated within the Arabic clause. In other words, conjuncts and disjuncts do not comprise the Theme, or part of the thematic structure of the Arabic Nominal clause.

Unlike conjuncts and disjuncts, Adjuncts are mobile elements and are integrated within the structure of the Arabic clause (Quirk et al. 1972). They may occur finally, medially or initially in Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences such as “in the second round” in the following examples:

¹¹¹ The capitalization system in this study is adopted from Halliday (2004).

3.69. ¹¹² تحسن أداء اللاعبين في الشوط الثاني

[Improved the performance of the players in the second round.]

The performance of the players improved in the second round.

3.69(a) تحسن في الشوط الثاني أداء اللاعبين

[Improved in the second round the performance of the players.]

The performance of the players, in the second round, improved.

3.69(b) في الشوط الثاني تحسن أداء اللاعبين

[In the second round improved the performance of the players.]

In the second round, the performance of the players improved.

Although Adjuncts can occupy any position in Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences, they occur most commonly and are thus unmarked in sentence-final position, as in example 3.69. In the view of Quirk et al. (1972), the more obligatory an Adjunct is in a certain position, the more it is integrated within the message of the clause, and the more optional it is, the less it is integrated within the message. Accordingly, TAGs distinguish between two types of Adjuncts, optional Adjuncts and obligatory Adjuncts (Abdul-Raof 1998). Optional Adjuncts are adverbials of setting, i.e. temporal, locative, or manner, as illustrated in the following examples¹¹³:

3.69. ¹¹⁴ تحسن أداء اللاعبين في الشوط الثاني

(Temporal Adjunct)

[Improved the performance of the players *in the second round*]

The performance of the players improved *in the second round*.

3.70. لا يصاب الإنسان بالبرد هنا على الشاطئ.

(Locative Adjunct)

[Not catch man a cold *here on the beach*]

Man does not catch a cold *here on the beach*.

3.71. انفتح الباب بهدوء و حذر.

(Adjuncts of manner)

[Opened the door *quietly and carefully*]

The door opened *quietly and carefully*.

Optional Adjuncts are more mobile than obligatory Adjuncts and function as clause Adverbials, i.e. they do not modify a certain element in the clause, such as the verb, but

¹¹² Examples are taken from Abdul-Raof (1998: 71).

¹¹³ examples are used by Abdul-Raof (1998: 72).

¹¹⁴ Optional Adjuncts are italicized in these examples.

they modify the clause as a whole and thus are less integrated within the meaning of the clause. Abdul-Raof (1999: 72) notes that optional Adjuncts “are not part of completing the sense of the statement, i.e. their deletion would not cripple the meaning of the sentence due to the fact that they are not verb-dependent constituents.” While optional Adjuncts are mobile, obligatory Adjuncts are less mobile and are linked directly to the verbal constituent of the Verbal sentence or to the rhematic constituent of the Nominal sentence, even when they occur initially (Abdul-Raof 1998). Obligatory Adjuncts, also known as adverbs of specification, function as verb Complements, as in the following examples¹¹⁵:

3.72. جاء من بيروت (Verbal sentence with an obligatory Adjunct)
 [Came *from Beirut*]
 He came *from Beirut*.

3.73. الطفل في المدرسة (Nominal sentence with an obligatory Adjunct)
 [The child *in the school*]
 The child is *in the school*.

Obligatory Adjuncts can occur initially as in examples 3.72(a) and 3.73(a):

3.72(a) من بيروت جاء (Verbal sentence with a fronted Adjunct)
 [*From Beirut* came-he]
From Beirut, he came.

3.73(a) في المدرسة طفل (Nominal sentence with a fronted Adjunct)
 [*In the school* a child]
In the school, there is a child.

According to TAGs, the Subject of the Nominal sentence, “a child”, in example 3.73(a) functions as a rhematized Theme مبتدأ مؤخر, or a delayed mubtada’, and the prepositional phrase “in the school” functions as a thematized Rheme خبر مقدم (Abdul-Raof 1998). The rhematized Theme is in this case indefinite¹¹⁶, “a child”, and the fronted Adjunct is linked directly to an implicit Rheme meaning “exist” or “there is”¹¹⁷. The fronted Adjuncts, whose use is marked in Classical Arabic, are not fully recognized by TAGs. TAGs seem to account for the change of word sequence in Nominal sentences, as in

¹¹⁵ Obligatory Adjuncts are italicized in these examples.

¹¹⁶ see section 3.5.2.

¹¹⁷ According to TAGs, the thematization of Rhemes is essential when Rhemes are indefinite nouns.

example 3.73(a), but not in Verbal sentences, as in example 3.72(a). Moreover, Adjuncts in Nominal sentences, whether in front or final position, are treated similarly by TAGs, i.e. as rhematic elements. It seems that TAGs do not provide a full account of unmarked and marked use of Adjuncts in both Verbal and Nominal sentences in Classical Arabic.

The next section will provide further shortcomings of the Classical approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Classical Arabic as adopted by Traditional Arab Grammarians.

3.5.4 Problems Encountered

Traditional Arab Grammarians have defined the *mubtada'*, Theme, in Arabic as a definite pre-verbal or initial noun displaying the nominative case marker (الـ) and the *khavar* as whatever comes after the *mubtada'* (section 3.5.2). However, the approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Traditional Arabic Grammar has been criticized for a number of reasons.

Firstly, modern Arab linguists, Moutaouakil (1989), Abdul-Raof (1998), Gaballa (1986), Al-Makhzumi (1964) and Beeston (1970) among others, criticize TAGs for analysing Theme and Rheme, or the *mubtada'* and *khavar* in Classical Arabic, grammatically, rather than semantically or pragmatically. According to Abdul-Raof (1998), Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic grammar are morpho-syntactic notions which rely heavily upon case marking. In his view (1998: 5), the morpho-syntactic definition of Theme and Rheme in Arabic is very confusing and leads to “conceptual muddle”. For instance, initial nouns which function as objects are not assigned the function *mubtada'* for the sole reason that they display the accusative case marker. The initial object “a story” in example 3.74 does not function as Theme because it displays an accusative marker.

3.74. قصةً هندٌ نشرت (Nominal sentence with a fronted object)

[A story Hind published]

It was a story that Hind published.

By the same token, Gaballa (1986) criticizes the purely formal treatment of Theme and Rheme in Classical Arabic and considers the terminology to be confusing, ambiguous, overlapping and incoherent. Moreover, Moutaouakil (1989) criticizes the grammatical

use of the term Theme in Classical Arabic and the lacking of semantic and pragmatic depth. He refers to definiteness in relation to initial Themes in Traditional Arabic Grammar, i.e. Themes are always definite in initial position (section 3.5.2). In his view, Arab grammarians seem to associate Theme with definiteness, i.e. Themes are presupposed as given or known information. However, there are cases in Arabic where Themes present New information in initial position as in:

- 3.75. من جاء؟ [Who arrived?]
 3.76. أحمد جاء [Ahmad arrived].

The speaker in example 3.75 presents the event of arrival, which becomes old information in example 3.76. What the hearer in example 3.76 does not know is that the one who arrived is “Ahmad”. Accordingly, “Ahmad” in example 3.76 is the new information and functions as the Theme. Thus, the TAGs’ definition of Theme in Classical Arabic is purely formal and grammatical and does not take the semantic and pragmatic perspective of analysis into account.

Secondly, Traditional, and probably most Modern, Arabic Grammarians have been criticized for analysing Theme and Rheme on a sentence basis. According to Abdul-Raof (1998), the analysis of Theme and Rheme has so far been confined to isolated sentences and there has been no consideration of the pragmatic level and the contextual situation of the real event. In his view, there have been no previous studies of the actual use of Theme and Rheme in Arabic. In other words, in order to ensure the pragmatic or functional level of analysis¹¹⁸, a study of Theme and Rheme should be carried out on large and comprehensive Arabic corpora, including different text types and genres, such as news reports, editorials, political speeches, magazines, short stories, and novels.

Thirdly, it can also be argued that TAGs have failed to account, semantically and pragmatically, for Adjuncts and Complements in sentence-initial position (see section 3.5.3). Fronted Adjuncts, such as “in the river” in example 3.77 below, and fronted Complements, such as “A story” in example 3.78, are analysed by TAGs in the same way as unmarked final Adjuncts and Complements¹¹⁹.

- 3.77. في النهر وقع الولد (Verbal sentence with a fronted prepositional phrase)
[In the river fell the boy]

¹¹⁸ Daneš (1964) and Firbas (1974) use the term “pragmatic” and “functional” level of discourse interchangeably.

¹¹⁹ Fronted Adjuncts and Complements are italicized in these examples.

In the river, the boy fell.

- 3.78. قصة نشرت هند (Verbal sentence with a fronted Complement)
[A story published Hind]
A story was published by Hind.

Sentences, such as those in examples 3.77 and 3.78, above are referred to by TAGs as Verbal sentences even though an Adjunct or a noun is brought into initial position. Although TAGs recognize the reasons for placing Adjuncts and Complements in initial position, for instance when the *mubtada'* is indefinite, their terminologies fail to account semantically and pragmatically for changing the order of constituents in Arabic.

Having identified some of the problems of the traditional approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Classical Arabic, the following section will present the Functional approach adopted by a few modern Arab linguists and scholars in an attempt to overcome the difficulties encountered by TAGs.

3.6 The Approach of Modern Arab Linguists to Theme-Rheme Analysis

Having realized the problems encountered by applying the traditional approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Classical Arabic (CA), a few modern Arab linguists have attempted a new approach in Modern Standard Arabic (MSA), which is the present-day version of Arabic used in contemporary literature, magazines, articles, political speeches, news reports and all formal present-day contexts¹²⁰. Section 3.6.1 will present the modern Arab approach adopted from the Prague School linguists, namely Functional Sentence Perspective (see section 3.3). Section 3.6.2 will then present a brief assessment and some critical views of the modern Arab approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in MSA.

3.6.1 An FSP Approach to Theme-Rheme Analysis in Modern Standard Arabic

As a result of the syntactic treatment of Theme and Rheme by the TAGs, a few modern Arab scholars, Abu-Ghazaleh (1983), Abu-Mansour (1982), Aziz (1988), Moutaouakil (1989), Hatim (1989) and Obiedat (1990), adopt a new approach to the analysis of

¹²⁰ See Zughoul (1979) for more discussion on CA and MSA.

Theme and Rheme, that is what is known as the Functional Sentence Perspective approach¹²¹. According to them, applying an FSP approach helps to analyse Theme and Rheme in both Nominal (equative and non-equative) and Verbal sentences. Hatim (1989), for instance, attempts to explain the reasons underlying the choice between Nominal and Verbal sentences by analysing the thematic structure of different types of texts. Hatim applies the notion of Thematic Progression (TP) proposed by Daneš (1974) in two different text types, namely exposition and argumentation¹²². According to Hatim (1989), the patterns of TP in Arabic suggest that while Verbal sentences are frequently used in neutral and non-evaluative texts, such as exposition, Nominal sentences are essentially evaluative and are frequently used in argumentation. His findings are supported by TAGs who regard the Verbal sentence as “the basis of expression in Arabic”, i.e. the unmarked clause type, and the sequence verb-Subject-object as the most common and unmarked form of a sentence (section 3.5.1). Like Hatim (1989), Obiedat (1990) investigates TP in argumentative and expository texts in Arabic and English. Obiedat (1990: 21) notes that:

Generally speaking, inflected languages like Czech, Latin, classical Greek and Arabic have much freer word order than uninflected languages like English. Therefore, the FSP principle plays a more important role in determining the word order of these languages than of English which has a strict word order, determined by a set of grammatical rules.

Obiedat concludes that the thematic development of the analysed texts shows MSA as more susceptible to the requirements of FSP than English. In other words, word order in MSA responds better to the principles of CD than it does in English. Obiedat’s conclusion is supported by Aziz (1988), who also claims that the advantages of CD principles are more obvious in languages with relatively free word order like Arabic. Aziz (1988: 121) states that, “It should be noted, however, that in a language like Arabic, where the word order is relatively free, it is not possible to tie thematization arrangement to any one fixed word order”. However, Aziz (1988) and Obiedat (1990) do not provide a great deal of evidence to support their claim. Aziz’s analysis, which covers a small part of an Egyptian novel entitled *Children of Gebelawi* by Naguib Mahfouz, does not provide an in-depth and comprehensive study of Theme and Rheme organization in MSA. Aziz (1988: 126) himself admits that the results of his analysis should be validated by “large data and varied materials”. Similarly, Obiedat’s analysis covers a small number of texts, 4 in Arabic and 4 in English.

¹²¹ See section 3.3.

¹²² See section 2.3.2.1 for discussion of text types.

Two Arab scholars also attempt to apply the FSP approach and the notion of Communicative Dynamism to the analysis of Theme and Rheme in MSA. Abu-Mansour (1982; 1986) presents a functional account of Verbal and Nominal sentences in written Arabic texts. He maintains that in order to fully analyse a sentence structure, the functions of constituents and how they are related to the overall structures of discourse¹²³ should be taken into account. In order to achieve that, he considers verbs as either thematic or rhematic depending on their degrees of CD. Similarly, Abu-Ghazaleh (1983) maintains that verbs play a major communicative role in spoken narrative discourse. In her analysis of Palestinian Arabic¹²⁴, Abu-Ghazaleh considers verbs as Themes in an oral discourse answering the question “what happened”.

Having presented the main functional approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis adopted by some modern Arab scholars, the following section will discuss the shortcomings and the problems encountered when dealing with the FSP approach in analysing Theme and Rheme in MSA¹²⁵.

3.6.2 Problems Encountered

Although modern Arab scholars attempt a functional analysis of Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences, their approach to Theme-Transition-Rheme seems subjective and inconsistent for a number of reasons.

Firstly, identifying Theme, Transition and Rheme in Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences by means of the degrees of CD relies largely on the interpretations made by the writer, reader or analyst. Even with the presence of the context of situation, drawing a sharp line between sentence elements in terms of the degree of CD they carry may be inaccurate as it differs from one interpretation to another (see section 3.7). In other words, in order to avoid the subjective and circular analysis of Theme, Transition and Rheme, variable interpretations of text interlocutors, the writer, the reader and the analyst, should be taken into account. What the writer considers as retrievable or old information, i.e. the Theme, may not be considered so by the reader or the analyst. Moreover, the FSP approach does not provide a comprehensive and objective toolkit with which to analyse sentence constituents in MSA with respect to Firbas’s notion of

¹²³ See section 2.3.1.

¹²⁴ A colloquial dialect of Arabic spoken by Palestinians.

¹²⁵ MSA and Arabic will be used interchangeably in this study.

CD. In other words, there is no single objective procedure by which modern Arab functional linguists can identify exactly Theme, Transition and Rheme.

Secondly, modern Arab scholars seem to pay little attention to the syntactic and textual devices available in MSA to indicate marked structures¹²⁶. Such is the case with cleft and pseudo-cleft structures and the transformational processes of thematization, passivization and nominalization. The textual and syntactic devices available in MSA are capable of rendering an unmarked sentence into a marked one. Modern Arab scholars do not seem to account fully for the marked structures of Theme-Rheme analysis in MSA.

Thirdly, the analysis of verbal constituents by modern Arab linguists is inconsistent and differs from one Arab scholar to another. On the one hand, Aziz (1988), Obiedat (1990) and Hatim (1989; 1990) consider verbs (modals, auxiliaries and lexical) as transitional elements in their analysis, even when the verb is communicatively more important than the Subject as in the following example:

3.79. جاء أحمد إلى المحطة

[Came Ahmad to the station]

Ahmad came to the station.

Since the function of the Arabic Verbal sentence, as in example 3.79, is to relate an act or an event, Arabic native speakers consider the verb as unknown information to the hearer, whereas the Subject and the Adjunct are assumed to be known information. In other words, the verb “came” in example 3.79 is considered as communicatively more important than the Subject, which contradicts the FSP definition of Transition. This claim is supported by Aziz (1988) who points out that in Verbal sentences consisting of two elements only, like جاء أحمد “came Ahmad”¹²⁷, the verb normally functions as Rheme and the Subject as Theme, because in the unmarked Verbal sentence the verb is communicatively more important than the Subject. In fact, Aziz’s analysis of the two-element Verbal sentence suggests that New information comes first and is followed by old information in unmarked Arabic Verbal sentence. However, this also appears to contradict the FSP approach in which a Theme precedes and is followed by a Rheme in

¹²⁶ See section 3.4.6 on marked structures.

¹²⁷ Translated as “Ahmad came”.

unmarked, or most common, structures¹²⁸. Consequently the definition of Transition, according to scholars such as Aziz (1988), Obiedat (1990) and Hatim (1989; 1990), is ambiguous and misleading. On the other hand, other modern scholars such as Abu-Mansour (1982; 1986) and Abu-Ghazaleh (1983) no longer consider verbs as Transitions. While Abu-Mansour (1982; 1986) analyses verbs, according to context, as Themes, Rhemes or part of the thematic or rhematic elements of the clause, Abu-Ghazaleh (1983) analyses verbs as mostly thematic elements in narrative spoken language. In fact, since *mubtada'* in Arabic literally means “inchoative”, it may be more plausible to consider verbs not as Transitions but rather as Themes or Rhemes.

Generally speaking, although modern Arab linguists have managed to overcome the shortcomings of Traditional Arab Grammarians, by analysing Theme and Rheme in both Verbal and Nominal sentences, assigning verbs the functions Transition, Theme or Rheme and accounting for initial Complements and Adjuncts in Nominal and Verbal structures, their functional analysis is confusing and inconsistent. The next section will assess the approaches discussed in this chapter and develop a theoretical framework to analyse Theme and Rheme in both English and Arabic.

3.7 Developing a Theoretical Model

The aim of this section is to develop an objective and applicable model of Theme and Rheme to analyse the selected English- and Arabic- language news reports. Three main approaches are considered in this analysis, the Traditional Arab Grammarians' approach¹²⁹, the Prague School approaches¹³⁰ and the Hallidayan approach. In Arabic, two approaches are adopted to analyse Themes and Rhemes, the Traditional Arab Grammarians' approach and the Functional modern Arabic approach (Chapter 3). Traditional Arab Grammarians (TAGs) have analysed Arabic Nominal clauses according to the grammatical units of Theme and Rheme (Section 3.5). According to them, the Theme represents the initial noun phrase functioning as the Subject in Nominal clauses and the Rheme represents whatever comes after. Given that the data selected for this analysis is Arabic- and English-language news reports, adopting the TAGs' approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic Verbal and Nominal clauses would be problematic for the following two reasons: firstly, TAGs have analysed

¹²⁸ See sections 3.3.2 and 3.3.3 on the criticisms of FSP.

¹²⁹ This is only applicable to Arabic clauses.

¹³⁰ Mathesius, Firbas and Daneš and later adopted by a few modern Arab scholars.

Theme and Rheme only in Arabic Nominal clauses (section 3.5.4). Verbal clauses, in the view of TAGs, do not have Themes and Rhemes because they comprise one package of information (Abdul-Raof 1998). Since Arab grammarians state that the Verbal clause is the basis of expression in Arabic and it is the dominant clause type in Arabic-language news reports, as noted by Hatim (1989) and Parkinson (1981)¹³¹, adopting the traditional approach to Theme-Rheme in Arabic-language news reports would allow for the analysis of very few clauses in comparison to Theme-Rheme analysis in the English-language news reports. Secondly, TAGs do not account for fronted Adjuncts and Complements in Arabic Verbal and Nominal clauses. Fronted Adjuncts or Complements do not normally function as Themes or Rhemes¹³². Thus, carrying out a comparative study of Theme and Rheme in English- and Arabic-language news reports would produce incomplete and incomprehensive results, if the traditional approach is adopted in the analysis of the Arabic data. Therefore, it is necessary to find a model by means of which all types of Arabic clauses, Verbal and Nominal, can be analysed, and fronted Adjuncts and Complements can be accounted for in terms of Theme and Rheme.

The Functional Sentence Perspective theory, which is later adopted by a few modern Arab scholars, seems to find an answer. Like the Prague linguists, a few modern Arab scholars, including Moutaouakil (1989) and abu-Mansour (1986), analyse elements according to their communicative roles or degrees of CD rather than the type of the clause they are in (see section 3.6). The application of the FSP approach will enable the analysis of both Nominal and Verbal clauses in Arabic-language news reports and will account for fronted Complements and Adjuncts as either Themes or Rhemes. The question remains which analytical tools should be considered in the analysis of the corpus and which should not, namely the analytical methods adopted by Mathesius, Firbas or Daneš. Mathesius defines Theme and Rheme according to their communicative roles in the sentence, Theme as the point of departure presenting old information and Rheme as the goal of discourse presenting New information (section 3.3). However, Mathesius's definition of Theme and Rheme does not seem easily applicable to the analysis of English- and Arabic-language news reports. The reason is that Mathesius provides a subjective method of analysis by confusing two structures: the thematic structure and the informational structure, as noted by Firbas (1974). Elements

¹³¹ See Parkinson (1981) for a qualitative study of word order in Modern Standard Arabic.

¹³² Except in a very few cases where the Theme is indefinite and the Rheme is a fronted prepositional phrase.

which may occur initially in the clause, for instance, may not reveal known information even in their natural and unmarked use. This is the case of many clauses in the data, as in the following example taken from the BBC English news report, group 1:

3.80. A previously-unknown group calling itself Strugglers for the Unity and Freedom of the Levant issued a statement saying it had carried out the attack.¹³³

According to Mathesius's definition of Theme, the underlined thematic elements in example 3.80 are assumed to be known, whereas in this example they reveal unknown information. The Theme, "A previously-unknown group calling itself Strugglers for the Unity and Freedom of the Levant", in example 3.80, is not predicted nor mentioned before in the BBC English report. To overcome this confusion, Firbas offers a new tool, namely degrees of Communicative Dynamism (CD). In his approach, Firbas (1966) defines Theme as elements which are communicatively less important than Rheme (see section 3.3.3). For Firbas (1966), the information structure is separate from the thematic structure, i.e. the theme communicates less than the Rheme even when the former reveals New information. Firbas (1974) also assigns the function Transition to verbal elements in the sentence. Transitions are defined as those elements which are communicatively more important than the Theme but less important than the Rheme. The problem with Firbas's approach is twofold. Firstly, although his notion of Communicative Dynamism seems to work in theory, its application is still subjective and open to interpretation. There is no definite and practical means to know whether a certain element is partially or completely in the conscious of the hearer/reader of the context. In other words, there are no common and objective grounds on which to test whether both speakers/writers and hearers/readers regard a certain element as carrying exactly the same degree of Communicative Dynamism. Secondly, Firbas's notion of transitional elements seems to lack a clear and concise definition. A verb, for example, can be communicatively more important than both the Theme and the Rheme. This is also true when the notion of CD is applied to Arabic, as in the following example from the data:

3.81. دان مصدر إعلامي رسمي بشدة حادث الانفجار¹³⁴.

Gloss: [*Condemned* a source information official strongly the accident of explosion.]

Idiomatic Translation: An official information source strongly *condemned* the explosion.

¹³³ The BBC English report on 12 December 2005.

¹³⁴ An example from *Teshreen*, a Syrian newspaper, on 13/12/2005.

In example 3.81, the verbal element, “condemned”, in italics, is communicatively more important than the Theme, “an official information source”, and the Rheme, “the explosion”. The transitional element, “condemned”, is also presented in the context as New and unpredicted information, whereas the Theme and the Rheme are presented as old and predicted information. The verbal element, “condemned”, seems to have an ideological significance and a communicative role for readers of the *Teshreen* news report, i.e. the Syrian government refutes the allegations that it was behind the killing of the Lebanese MP Tueni and disapproves of the assassinations in Lebanon. By the same token, Daneš’s approach, which uses Firbas’s notion of CD, is criticized for the same reasons. However, the implications of Daneš’s theory and his contributions to the field of FSP and Theme-Rheme organization should not be neglected or underestimated. According to Daneš (1964), the study of the three-level approach to syntax and patterns of Thematic Progression are required in order to treat syntactic problems, such as ordering sentence elements and organizing utterances and even context. In other words, the study of thematic patterns helps to interpret the meaning potentials in discourse. Daneš (1964) also points out that the study of Theme and Rheme is contained within the third level of syntax, i.e. the FSP level. Moreover, Daneš (1974) argues that the structure of a coherent discourse can be described in terms of underlying patterns of thematic sequence, the choices of Themes and Rhemes and their relationship to each other. Hence, studying Thematic Progression patterns is considered essential to exploring the different structures of the Arabic and English news reports (see section 2.3). It also helps to explore and unravel underlying differences regarding the choice of a dominant Theme and thematic pattern in news presentation in the English and Arabic data¹³⁵. However, objective methods to analyse Themes and Rhemes in the selected data are still lacking in the previous approaches. This is where Halliday’s approach and his definition of Theme and Rheme offer a solution.

Unlike FSP, which defines Theme and Rheme according to Given and New information respectively, the Hallidayan model defines Theme and Rheme according to their positions in the sentence, i.e. Theme is always sentence-initial and Rheme is whatever comes after. FSP allows both Theme-Rheme and Rheme-Theme structures, whereas Halliday’s approach allows a Theme-Rheme structure only. Nonetheless, Halliday’s model has been criticized for the following reasons. Firstly, Halliday’s definition of

¹³⁵ The implications behind the use of a dominant thematic pattern will be investigated in section 5.1 following Hatim (1987; 1989).

Theme and Rheme is criticized for its partial circularity¹³⁶. Baker (1992) points out that since the Theme is whatever comes initially in the sentence, then whatever comes initially is the Theme. Halliday's definitions of Themes and Rhemes imply a certain degree of circularity. However, it can be argued that the partial circularity of Halliday's definition does not affect the validity of his theory. Halliday (2004) defines Theme and Rheme as functional tools and text-creating elements, rather than grammatical, or syntactic, devices. In other words, Theme and Rheme are not features of context, but features of text (sections 3.4.3.2 and 3.4.8). Moreover, Halliday (2004) distinguishes between the thematic and information levels. The interplay between these two levels helps to construct the clause as a message and interpret the meaning potentials in its social context. Therefore, defining Theme and Rheme according to their positions in the clause will not affect the validity of his approach. Secondly, Halliday's approach has been criticized for its failure to relate the definition of Theme and Rheme to verb-initial languages, like Arabic (Baker 1992). However, applying Halliday's model to languages with free word order, like Arabic, does not seem overly problematic. Halliday (2004) discusses some rare cases in English where verbs can occur initially as marked structures in declarative clauses (section 3.4.6.1). In dealing with verb-initial languages, what is a marked structure in one language, such as English, is unmarked in another language, such as Arabic. Arabic, which usually thematizes verbs, considers the sequence VSO unmarked and parallel to SVO in English¹³⁷. Thirdly, Daneš (1974) criticizes Halliday's model for paying more attention to Theme than Rheme. Daneš (1974) claims that linguists, like Halliday, frequently use the term "thematization", but rarely use "rhematization", in spite of the fact that the Rheme usually represents the core of the message, or what is called in FSP New information. However, Halliday (1974) points out that the thematic structure which is concerned with Theme and Rheme is different from the information structure which is concerned with Given and New information. For Halliday (2004) Theme can convey either Given or New information depending on the speaker's motives and the context of situation. Halliday (2004) also pays equal attention to marked Rhemes. He (2004) discusses marked identifying Rhemes where nominalization occurs in sentence final position. Halliday (2004: 71) presents the following examples of marked Rhemes in English:

3.82. *A loaf of bread is what we need.* (Marked Rheme = identifying clause)

3.83. *That is what they do not tell us.* (Marked Rheme= identifying clause)

¹³⁶ Baker (1992) uses the term 'partial circularity' rather than 'circularity' because initial position, according to her, is identified independently of Theme.

¹³⁷ Further discussions of verbs as Themes in Arabic will be the subject of the Chapter 4.

Moreover, since the selected corpus deals with English and Arabic news reports, focusing on the thematic elements can be helpful for the following reasons. Elements in Theme position attract the readers' attention more than elements in Rheme position, as noted by Halliday (2004). The order of Themes and Rhemes and their organization in the clause and context are not arbitrary or value-free. Elements in theme position, especially in news headlines - what van Dijk (1988) refers to as global theme (section 2.3.3.1) - are selected by journalists to attract the readers' attention to what they consider important and newsworthy. The selection of thematic and rhematic elements can also reflect a specific angle of telling the news story (see section 3.4.8). An attempt to investigate the role of rhematization in the analysis of the thematic structures in the data will be carried out in Chapter 5.

Finally, Fish (1981) criticizes Halliday's approach for being too complicated, abstract and meaningless. In his words (1981: 61):

When a text is run through Halliday's machine, its parts are first disassembled, then labelled, and finally recombined into their original form. The procedure is a complicated one, and it requires a great many operations, but the critic who performs them has finally done nothing at all.

To put it differently, Halliday's model is criticised for doing no more than labelling, assigning functions to and organizing sentence constituents into categories, while claiming that these labels and functions construct the social meanings in the clause as a message. Fish (1981) also criticizes Halliday and his followers for assigning fixed significances and meanings to their data and bypassing the context in which it actually occurs. Halliday and his followers, according to Fish (1981), do not seem to acknowledge the reader's experience and interpretation of meanings. The organization of Theme and Rheme elements and Given and New information in Halliday's model is speaker-oriented. In other words, Halliday's approach takes into consideration how speakers/writers organize their utterances/texts, while overlooks the listeners/hearer's interpretation of the clause as a message. In order to avoid such criticism, this study will attempt to incorporate aspects of van Dijk's socio-cognitive theory into Halliday's model of Theme-Rheme in order to identify the different social meanings and political interpretations in news discourse. The concepts presented by van Dijk's (1988; 1998) such as global theme, macropropositions, presuppositions and implications will help to account for the readers' construction of meanings and interpretation of significance in the social context of discourse.

To sum up, the criticisms addressed above seem to address the Functional Sentence Perspective approach, which considers the information structure and thematic structure as one, rather than the Hallidayan approach. It has been argued that Halliday (2004) offers a comprehensive model of Theme-Rheme analysis in the sense that he covers all kinds of clauses and moods in his analysis. Unlike FSP where Theme and Rheme are semantically and syntactically difficult to locate, Halliday's model is simple and easy to apply, especially in noun-initial languages such as English. Since Theme in the Hallidayan model is always placed in sentence-initial position, identifying the Theme and Rheme in news reports will not be problematic or open to as many interpretations as in FSP. By definition, Halliday's model of Theme and Rheme in English seems objective, straightforward and easy to apply to the analysis of news reports – the reason why it will be adopted in the current study. The next section will conclude Chapter 3 by presenting the main points discussed in relation to Theme-Rheme analysis in both English and Arabic.

3.8 Concluding Remarks

Chapter 3 has discussed the different approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in English and Arabic. Theme and Rheme have been defined differently by the linguists of different languages. In the view of Li (1976), there is no universal definition or one procedure by which linguists can identify Theme and Rheme in a language. For instance, while the Prague school linguists define Theme and Rheme as pragmatic functions of discourse, Hallidayan linguists define Theme and Rheme as textual functions or text-creating elements. In Arabic, Traditional Arab Grammarians (TAGs), define Theme and Rheme differently from the way they are defined in English. In old or Classical Arabic, the *mubtada'* and *khabar*, Theme and Rheme, were analysed as grammatical tools in Nominal sentences (section 3.5). In Modern Arabic, however, modern Arab linguists adopt an FSP-oriented approach to sentence analysis by which both Nominal and Verbal sentences can be analysed in terms of Theme and Rheme (section 3.6). Chapter 3 has provided a critical view of these approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in English and Arabic taking into consideration the need to find, firstly, a unifying definition of Theme and Rheme in both Arabic and English, and secondly, to find an objective and comprehensive method of sentence analysis and an applicable approach which can be adopted when analysing English- and Arabic-language news reports. Chapter 3 has concluded that applying Halliday's model of Theme-Rheme

analysis in unmarked and marked thematic structures in English- and Arabic-language news reports accommodates the requirements of an objective and comprehensive method of analysis. Having identified the model of Theme-Rheme analysis, the next chapter will introduce the selected corpus and methodologies adopted in this study.

CHAPTER FOUR

CORPORA AND METHODOLOGY

Chapter 3 discussed the different approaches to Theme-Rheme analysis in English and Arabic and presented the shortcomings involved in the application of these approaches, especially in relation to the language of the news. Theme and Rheme have been defined and presented according to two main approaches in English; the Functional Sentence Perspective (FSP) approach adopted by the Prague School linguists and the systemic functional approach by Halliday. The FSP approach was later adopted by a few modern Arab scholars who criticized the Traditional Arabic Grammar approach for its incomprehensive, sentence-based and descriptive analysis. Chapter 3 also identified Halliday's approach as the model adopted in the analysis of the selected data. This model will be developed in Chapter 4 to analyse Verbal and Nominal clauses in Arabic-language news reports. Section 4.1 will present the aims of the study and implications for methodology. Section 4.2 will discuss in detail the creation of the corpus, data collection and description. Drawing on Halliday's systemic functional approach, Theme and Rheme in Arabic will be redefined in section 4.3. The choice of units of analysis and the application of Halliday's information system in the selected corpus will be discussed in section 4.4. Section 4.5 will present other analytical tools which will be adopted in the analysis of the thematic structures in the English and Arabic corpora, namely the analysis of thematization, nominalization and lexical variations as Theme-Rheme and Given-New information. Methods of data analysis, qualitative and quantitative, will also be presented in this section.

4.1 Aims of the Project and Implications for Methodology

The aims of this project are identified as follows:

1. to develop Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme in Arabic texts
2. to apply the developed model to a selected corpus of English and Arabic news reports in an attempt to help elucidate underlying ideologies

More specifically, this project aims at investigating the different choices of Themes and Rhemes as Given/New information and exploring the ideological significance and implications of these choices in the selected data. If we are to be successful in attaining objective results, methods of data collection and analysis must be developed in

accordance with the objectives of this study, for as Sinclair (1991: 13) notes “the results are only as good as the corpus”. Methods of data collection and analysis must take into account two main criteria: objectivity and comparability. Drawing on Halliday’s approach, this study attempts to develop an objective model to analyse Theme-Rheme elements in English- and Arabic-language news reports (section 4.3). This model allows the analysis of Arabic Verbal and Nominal clauses in terms of Theme-Rheme elements. However, it does not allow a comparative analysis of these elements in unmarked thematic structures in English- and Arabic-language news reports. The elements which are compared as unmarked Themes in this analysis, i.e. verbs in Arabic and Subjects in English, are not comparable and do not belong to the same word class¹³⁸, i.e. nouns (see sections 3.7 and 4.3). In order for elements to be comparable, they must share a “common platform of reference”, as noted by Krzeszowski (1989: 60):

It is obvious that no comparison is possible without establishing a common platform of reference. In other words, all comparisons involve the basic assumption that the objects to be compared share something in common against which differences can be stated. This common platform of reference is called TC [*tertium comparationis*].

To put it differently, this model must allow the Subject of unmarked thematic structures to function as part of the Theme in the Arabic-language news reports, as will be shown in section 4.3. Methods of data collection and aspects of objectivity and comparability are dealt with in the following section.

4.2 Corpus Creation

This section discusses the main issues involved in creating a corpus of Arabic and English news reports in order to carry out a comparative analysis of Theme-Rheme structures in both languages. Section 4.2.1 presents the main issues concerning building a corpus of English and Arabic news reports. Section 4.2.2 presents the methods of data collection and key points involved in seeking a representative corpus of Arabic and English news reports. Section 4.2.3 provides an introduction to the selected news media and a description of the selected news reports included in this study.

¹³⁸ Halliday (2004: 50) defines a class as “a set of items that are in some respect alike”. Word classes, also known as parts of speech, refer to the parts of a sentence, namely noun, verb, adjective, adverb, preposition, pronoun and conjunction.

4.2.1 Using a Corpus in the Study of Language

The term “corpus”, which is derived from the Latin for “body”, can be defined as any collection of more than one text or any body of text (McEnery and Wilson 1996). In modern linguistics, this notion tends to provide more specific connotations than the simple definition of a corpus. McEnery and Wilson (1996: 59) define a corpus as “a finite body of text, sampled to be maximally representative of a particular variety of a language, and which can be stored and manipulated using a computer”. In other words, the creation of a “corpus” implies three essential features: representative sampling, finite size and machine-readable form. According to Milroy (1987), a representative account of a language, or a variety of a language, means the description of that language, or variety, in general and without a bias towards any subgroup of speakers (Milroy 1987). Thus, in order to collect a representative corpus, one is faced with two options: first, to collect and analyse every single utterance and text in that language; or to construct a smaller sample of the variety of language under examination. The first option, as noted by McEnery and Wilson (1996), is only possible when this language is dead, like Latin, and has few texts to be analysed and studied. In living languages, such as English or Arabic, McEnery and Wilson (1996: 21-22) point out that:

More often, the total text population is huge, and...the number of utterances is constantly increasing and theoretically infinite. To analyse every utterance in such a language would be an unending and impossible task.

Even with the introduction of multi-million word corpora, such as the British National Corpus (BNC)¹³⁹, according to Sinclair (1991), any large corpus will still show little information about most of the word lists in the variety of language in use. The second option is, therefore, necessary to create a corpus, namely building a representative sample, which creates as accurate a picture as possible of the variety of language under examination. In linguistic surveys, such as the one carried out here, a representative corpus need not be particularly large, since “very consistent patterns emerge even with a very small sample, provided that it was systematically selected” (Milroy 1987: 27). The sampling of a corpus, thus, requires identifying in advance suitable criteria to be included in the corpus and then selecting the samples which fit these criteria. Milroy (1987) refers to this as “judgment sampling” in contrast with “random sampling”, which means all texts, or utterances, in a language, or a variety of language, have equal

¹³⁹ BNC is a collection of 100 million-word samples of written and spoken language from different sources. See <http://www.natcorp.ox.ac.uk/corpus/index.xml>.

chances of being selected and included in a corpus. Another form of data sampling is the “stratified random” method, which divides the total text population into relatively homogeneous subgroups (so-called strata) and samples each stratum at random (McEnery et al. 2005). Biber (1993) observes that a stratified sample is never less representative than a simple random sample. A corpus also implies a machine-readable form. For many years, a corpus was associated with the use of a printed form. Nowadays, a corpus normally implies the use of materials, which can be displayed, read and stored using computers. The advantages of using a machine-readable form, as McEnery and Wilson (1996) note, are that it is easily accessible, searched and manipulated. A corpus also implies finite dimensions, i.e. setting out in detail the overall size of a corpus. The number of texts and words a corpus encloses, as well as the size of each sample, i.e. word collection should be included.

This study encompasses mainstream internationally recognized news media reports from online sources. To be further inclusive, lesser known online news media, such as those from Syria and Lebanon, are also included. In terms of representation and sampling, a form of stratified random sampling is used in which the stratum equates to a common topic. In general stratified sampling of those articles having a common stratum (global theme) one would take a random subset of articles to form the corpus. In this thesis, *all* such available articles were included, as opposed to selecting a random subset. It is therefore the researcher's view that this data, spanning a two year publication period, includes most articles published and all that are available using even advanced online search facilities. As such, the corpus is representative of mainstream online Arabic and English news media within the context of a common stratum (topic), during an extended period of time.

Having introduced the three main issues concerning using a corpus in the study of a language, the next section will present the criteria used to assemble a representative corpus of English and Arabic mainstream online news media reports.

4.2.2 The Selection of the Data

In a corpus-building project, defining the suitable criteria for inclusion helps to avoid and control as many variables as possible. These criteria include the definition of discourse, genre, and typology of the texts within the corpus in which this study is

interested. A discourse is defined as modes of written or spoken language which involve particular attitudes towards particular social events, such as a racist discourse, feminist discourse, democratic discourse, advertising discourse or medical discourse (sections 2.2.2 and 2.5.2). When a discourse is used in a conventional form for a specific social purpose, it forms a genre. Hatim and Mason (1990: 69) define genres as:

Conventionalised forms of texts which reflect the functions and goals involved in particular social occasions as well as the purposes of the participants in them... Genres may be literary or non-literary, linguistic or non-linguistic, including forms as disparate as poems, book reviews, christenings, etc.

The concept of typology refers to three main types of texts, namely expository, argumentative and instructive (see section 2.3.2.1). Expository texts are those which seek to narrate events in relations to time, describe objects in relations to space, or conceptualise ideas in terms of analysis or synthesis (Hatim 1989). Argumentative texts are those in which concepts of beliefs are argued and evaluated, either explicitly or implicitly. Instructive texts are those which seek to instruct and impose, i.e. with or without option, a future behaviour, such as treaties or contracts. It should be noted, that text types are not always clear cut, as two or more types can overlap in any given text (Hatim and Mason 1997). In this study, the starting point for data collection was building a representative corpus of a specific discourse, political, a specific genre, mainstream online news media reports, a specific typology, exposition, and a specific political event, the assassinations in Lebanon and the implication of Syria. The selection of the data is, then, aimed at building a bilingual corpus of expository English and Arabic written news texts, rather than an argumentative or instructive monolingual corpus of an oral language. Practical reasons are involved in the choice of the expository type as most - if not all - of the available texts from Arabic and English mainstream online news media sources are reports rather than editorials. Editorials in English and Arabic from these sources are rare and would be insufficient to conduct a comparative analysis and draw generalizable conclusions. By choosing these specifications, it was hoped that the study would provide as an accurate picture as possible of news presentation in both languages.

In addition, other criteria include the specification of further text variables, such as the topic, or subject, of news reports, the main events and the period during which these events took place. In choosing a major political event of international significance, for both Arabic and non-Arabic readers, as the main subject of the corpus, it was hoped that

a large number of Arabic and English news reports from diverse sources would be available for collection and analysis. This would provide rich and diverse materials for analysis in both languages and help to attain generalizable results of news presentation by mainstream news media. At the time of data collection, between the years 2005 and 2007, certain events seemed to dominate most news headlines in the Middle East, namely the series of assassinations of political figures in the Lebanese government and the implication of Syria in these assassinations. On 14 February, 2005, the Lebanese Prime Minister, Rafiq Hariri, was killed along with 22 others in a massive car bomb in Beirut. His assassination provoked an international outcry, which ended the 30-year presence of Syria and led to the withdrawal of its troops from Lebanon. In the same year, Samir Kasser, a Lebanese journalist, George Hawi, leader of the Communist party in Lebanon, Elias Murr, Lebanese Minister of Defence, and Gibran Tuani, a journalist and a Member of Parliament, were also killed in similar attacks. In November 2006, Pierre Gemayel, Lebanon's Industry Minister, and his bodyguard were shot dead north of Beirut. In 2007, Walid Eido and Antoine Ghanem, both members of the March 14 Alliance¹⁴⁰, were killed in a car bomb attack¹⁴¹. The politicians and journalists who were targeted in these attacks were known for their strong stands against Syria and their opposition to its interference in Lebanon's internal affairs. The killings in Lebanon, which were widely blamed on Syria, were investigated by the United Nations. However, these investigations have not yet led to any final judgment on who carried out the attacks. In this study, the selection of the data focuses on four main assassinations, namely the assassinations of Rafiq Hariri, Gibran Tuani, Pierre Gemayel and Waleed Eido. It also focuses on the news reports at the time which dealt with the US accusations to Syria of planning these attacks. A detailed description of the selected corpus, i.e. size, dates, and the news sources, is presented in section 4.2.2.

Another important criterion for selecting the data in this study is the choice of news sources, or the media from which these reports are gathered. In order to attain a representative corpus of English- and Arabic-language news media reports and achieve generalizable results, it was essential to include a wide variety of news media in English

¹⁴⁰ The March 14 Alliance (تحالف 14 آذار), named after the date of the Cedar Revolution in Lebanon, is a Sunni-Druze-Christian coalition which demanded the end of the Syrian existence in Lebanon. The coalition is currently led by the Future Movement, headed by MP Saad Hariri, younger son of former Prime Minister, Rafiq Hariri, who was assassinated in 14 February 2005. The alliance became the dominant group in Parliament in Lebanon 2005 elections. Their official website is <http://www.14march.org/index.php>.

¹⁴¹ See <http://english.aljazeera.net/news/middleeast/2007/12/2008525172717634160.html>, for more details on these assassinations.

and Arabic as well as ensure the following points. Firstly, news sources must include national news media from Syria and Lebanon, which present an inside view of the current situation and the tension between the two countries. Secondly, news sources must also include international, Arabic and English, news media, which address global readers, i.e. Arabic and English speakers, and aim at an objective presentation of the news. Thirdly, the selected sources should have English- and Arabic-language news reports. The selection of news media which provide written reports for English and Arabic speakers helps to enable comparability between different news presentation in English- and Arabic-language news reports collected from the same source, or media. More specifically, this choice helps to identify underlying views and trends in relation to news media and/or the language used in the news report. In other words, it helps to identify whether news presentation differs according to the selected language - the Arabic-language news reports present news differently from the English-language news reports - or whether it differs according to the selected news source – Arabic news sources present news differently in English and Arabic from English news sources. It also helps to collect equal numbers of English and Arabic news reports which are comparable in terms of content and style. This does not imply that the English- and Arabic-language news reports, especially those from the same source, are necessarily translations, i.e. the English reports are not translations of the Arabic, or vice versa. In studies like this, translated news reports are very hard to find, even if possible, the available translated materials are normally insufficient to conduct an objective and comparative analysis of English and Arabic news media reports dealing with these events¹⁴². The solution was to seek news reports from online news media sources which are easily accessible and available at the time of these assassinations.

Having identified the main issues related to data collection in this study and the key points related to building a representative corpus of English- and Arabic-language online news media reports on the assassinations in Lebanon, the next section will present a description of the corpus and a brief introduction to the news sources which are selected for this analysis.

¹⁴² Many attempts have been made in this study to contact news media in order to identify the source of their news reports. There were no replies from most of them. Most online news media have normally more than one source, as indicated in Aljazeera's website, for example, and by email contacts with others.

4.2.2 Corpus Description

This study analyses 100 news reports (50 in Arabic and 50 in English) collected from eleven Arabic and English online news sources, namely *Teshreen/Syria Times*, SANA, Syria News, NBN, Al-Manar, Al-Jazeera, Alarab, BBC, Reuters, AFP and CNN. Table 4.1 presents the selected news media and the numbers of Arabic and English news reports collected from each one.

| News Media | English Reports | Arabic Reports |
|-----------------------------|-----------------|----------------|
| <i>Teshreen/Syria Times</i> | 2 | 2 |
| SANA | 4 | 4 |
| Syria news | 3 | 3 |
| NBN | 4 | 4 |
| Al-Manar | 4 | 4 |
| Al-Jazeera | 5 | 5 |
| Alarab | 5 | 5 |
| BBC | 5 | 5 |
| Reuters | 6 | 6 |
| AFP | 6 | 6 |
| CNN | 6 | 6 |
| Totals | 50 | 50 |

Table 4.1 The Selected News Media and the Numbers of English and Arabic News Reports

The Arabic news sources include five local online media, from Syria and Lebanon, and two international news media¹⁴³. The Arabic local news media from Syria are *Teshreen/Syria Times*, SANA and Syria News. *Teshreen* is a Syrian daily newspaper issued in Damascus and controlled by the Ministry of Information. It presents news in Arabic and appears in the form of an e-paper¹⁴⁴. *Teshreen* Press also publishes a daily English-language newspaper, the *Syria Times*. The *Syria Times* publishes articles which are sometimes translated from *Teshreen* and also appears as an e-paper¹⁴⁵. Both newspapers are controlled by the Syrian Government. Four news reports (two in Arabic and two in English) have been collected from *Teshreen/Syria Times* newspapers, as shown in Table 4.1. SANA is a state-run Syrian Arab News agency which was created in 1965 and is centred in Damascus. According to its website, SANA's main goals are gathering news and distributing it to individuals and media institutions and providing

¹⁴³ International news media refer to those which attract the mass audience and usually have more than one base around the world, such as the BBC and Al-Jazeera.

¹⁴⁴ <http://www.tishreen.info>.

¹⁴⁵ <http://syriatimes.tishreen.info>.

news, analyses, and daily reports on Syria and the Middle East. Its website is available in Arabic, English and French¹⁴⁶. Eight news reports (four in Arabic and four in English) have been collected from SANA as shown in Table 4.1. Syria News is an independent internet-based media which features daily news and analyses on Syria, in particular, and the Middle East, in general. Many of the news articles reflect social problems and relate to everyday life in Syria. According to a Syria News contact, the intended audiences of the news reports are mainly Syrian readers inside and outside Syria. The Syria News website provides Arabic- and English-language news reports and aims at presenting authentic local news from Syrian sources and correspondents¹⁴⁷. Six news reports (three in Arabic and three in English) have been collected from Syria news website, as shown in Table 4.1.

The Arabic local news media from Lebanon are the NBN and Al-Manar. NBN (National Broadcasting Network) is a news television station owned by Nabih Berri, a Speaker of Parliament and Amal's Movement leader in Lebanon¹⁴⁸. NBN is a private company, founded in 1996. It offers the latest news together with a variety of live debates on political, social and cultural issues and programs on topics such as business, sports, documentaries, and tourism. Throughout the years, NBN has been popular among Lebanese and Arab audiences, ranging from 25 to 50 years of age and above. It aims at presenting credible information sources. Eight news reports (four in Arabic and four in English) have been collected from NBN website, as shown in Table 4.1. Al-Manar Television, or sometimes called Hezbollah Television, is a Lebanese television station. Al-Manar addresses Arabs and Muslims, in particular, all over the world. It claims objectivity and aims at participating in building a better future for the Arab and Muslim generations by focusing on the tolerant values of Islam and promoting the culture of dialogue¹⁴⁹. Al-Manar Television, which is considered to be the official media source for Hezbollah and its leader Hasan Nasrallah, are considered by some as a terrorist group and are banned from broadcasting in many countries including North America and France. Al-Manar has gained a huge amount of popularity among Arabs and non-Arabs especially after the latest war between Lebanon and Israel. Its website provides regional and worldwide news in both Arabic and English¹⁵⁰. Eight news

¹⁴⁶ <http://www.sana.org>.

¹⁴⁷ <http://www.syria-news.com>.

¹⁴⁸ Nabih Berri is considered a close ally to the Syrian government. NBN delivered online news until the year 2007.

¹⁴⁹ <http://www.almanar.com.lb/NewsSite/AboutUs.aspx?language=en>.

¹⁵⁰ <http://www.almanar.com.lb>.

reports (four in Arabic and four in English) have been collected from Al-Manar news website (see Table 4.1 above).

The selected international Arab news media are Al-Jazeera and the *Alarab* newspaper. Al-Jazeera, which is an independent corporation, is the most internationally recognized Arab news network based in Doha, Qatar. Al-Jazeera also has a broadcasting centre in London which broadcasts news in English. Its website provides news on political and cultural issues in the Middle East and the world in the form of Arabic- and English-language news reports¹⁵¹. Ten news reports (five in Arabic and five in English) have been collected from Al-Jazeera, as shown in Table 4.1 above. *Alarab* is an Arabic-language and English-language daily newspaper which also appears as an e-paper¹⁵². It is issued in London and mainly interested in the issues of the Middle East. *Alarab* has a world-wide distribution and popularity among Arabs and Arabic speaking readers. Ten news reports (five in Arabic and their equivalent in English) have been collected from *Alarab* newspaper, as shown in Table 4.1 above.

The selected international English news media are the BBC, Reuters, AFP and CNN. The BBC is the largest British broadcasting body and although government-funded strongly declares itself independent in its reporting. The BBC provides online services and news from all over the world¹⁵³. Its news is translated into many languages including Arabic¹⁵⁴. Twelve news reports (six in Arabic and their equivalent in English) have been collected from the BBC website, as shown in Table 4.1. Reuters¹⁵⁵ is the largest international multi-media news agency based in London. It reports extensively from around the world including the Middle East on topics ranging from financial markets to general and political news. Reuters claims to present news reports that are independent and free from bias. Reuters also provides general and political news in 18 languages including Arabic¹⁵⁶. Reuters Arabic claims to deliver fast, accurate, impartial and comprehensive coverage and analysis of all the key domestic and international news for Arabic readers around the world. Twelve news reports (six in Arabic and their equivalent in English) have been collected from Reuters, as shown in Table 4.1 above. AFP (Agence France-Presse) or the French news agency is the world's oldest

¹⁵¹ <http://english.aljazeera.net>.

¹⁵² <http://www.alarab.co.uk>.

¹⁵³ <http://news.bbc.co.uk>.

¹⁵⁴ <http://news.bbc.co.uk/hi/arabic/news>.

¹⁵⁵ <http://uk.reuters.com>.

¹⁵⁶ <http://ara.today.reuters.com>.

established news agency and one of the three largest with Associated Press and Reuters. AFP provides readers all over the world with extensive and comprehensive news coverage on events around the world, including the Middle East. It has ten bureaus in the Middle East, one of which is located in Damascus and one in Beirut. The news on its website¹⁵⁷ is available in six main languages: French, English, German, Spanish, Portuguese and Arabic. Twelve news reports (six in Arabic and their equivalent in English) have been collected from AFP, as shown in Table 5.1 above. CNN (Cable News Network)¹⁵⁸ is a major cable television network which aims at covering the most important international stories for its diverse global audience, inside and outside the United States. CNN has been accused of being slanted toward US interests when reporting on world conflicts and wars¹⁵⁹, especially in the Middle East. CNN presents international news in many languages including Arabic. CNN Arabic¹⁶⁰, which is headquartered in Dubai, United Arab Emirates, aims at presenting Arabic readers with national and international news from an Arab perspective. Twelve news reports (six in Arabic and their equivalent in English) have been collected from the CNN, as shown in Table 4.1 above.

The total 100 English and Arabic news reports constitute a corpus of 51,973 words, as shown in Table 4.2. The corpus, which reports the tension between Syria and Lebanon between the years 2005 and 2007, is divided into five main groups, or strata of sampling. The first group reports the assassination of Gibran Tueni, who was killed in a car bomb explosion on 12 December 2005. The second group reports the new leads in Hariri's murder which appeared on the news media websites around 26 September, 2006. The third group reports Syria's implication in the series of assassinations in Lebanon and its cooperation, or lack of cooperation, with the UN investigation team into these killings. The news reports in the third group appeared on the news media websites around 2 November 2006. The fourth group reports the assassination of the Lebanese Minister of Industry, Pierre Gemayel, who was shot dead on 21 November 2006. The fifth group reports the murder of Lebanese MP Walid Eido, who was killed in an explosion on 12 June 2007. These five groups are ordered according to the dates on which these news incidents took place. Table 4.2 shows the categorization of the

¹⁵⁷ <http://www.afp.com>.

¹⁵⁸ <http://edition.cnn.com>.

¹⁵⁹ See <http://www.cnnexposed.com/story.php?story=10> accessed on 15 November 2007.

¹⁶⁰ <http://arabic.cnn.com>.

corpus in terms of these five groups, the topics of the news, dates, numbers of the news reports selected from each group and the word count in each group.

| Group | Topics | Dates | Numbers of Reports | Word count |
|--------------|-------------------------|--------------|---------------------------|-------------------|
| 1 | Tueni's assassination | 12/12/2005 | 20 | 11547 |
| 2 | Hariri's murder | 26/09/2006 | 14 | 4010 |
| 3 | Syria's implication | 02/11/2006 | 20 | 9990 |
| 4 | Gemayel's assassination | 21/11/2006 | 24 | 13639 |
| 5 | Eido's killing | 12/06/2007 | 22 | 12787 |
| | | | 100 | 51973 |

Table 4.2 The Topics, Dates and Size of Each Group in the Selected Corpus

The news reports in each group were collected on the same dates these stories appeared on the news media websites. In other words, the publication dates of the selected news reports are same as the dates on which these reports have been collected for the study. Table 4.3 gives an example of the news reports selected in group 1. Table 4.3 shows the number given to each report, headlines, word count of each report, the dates on which they appeared online and the news media from which they were collected. There are 20 news reports in group 1 consisting of 11,547 words reporting on Tueni's assassination. The headlines of the English news reports are presented first in Table 4.2 followed by the Arabic headlines. The translations of the Arabic news headlines are provided in the same table.

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|--|-------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 | Syria condemns east Beirut blast, lashes out at slander campaign | 317 | <i>Syria Times</i> , 13/12/2005 |
| 2 | Gibran Tueni assassinated by car bomb | 574 | NBN, 13/12/2005 |
| 3 | Lebanon blast kills anti-Syrian lawmaker | 832 | Al-Jazeera, 12/12/2005 |
| 4 | Beirut car bomb kills anti-Syrian MP | 776 | <i>Alarab</i> , 12/12/2005 |
| 5 | Beirut Bomb kills anti-Syrian MP | 700 | BBC News , 12/12/2005 |
| 6 | Lebanon mourns slain anti-Syria newspaper magnate | 770 | Reuters, 13/12/2005 |
| 7 | Christian MP Tueni targeted in Beirut blast | 72 | AFP 1, 12/12/2005 |
| 8 | Anti-Syrian MP slain in Beirut car bombing | 758 | AFP 2, 12/12/2005 |
| 9 | Lebanon seeks international probe into killings | 912 | CNN 1, 13/12/2005 |
| 10 | Beirut blast kills anti-Syria MP | 675 | CNN 2, 14/12/2005 |

| | | | |
|----|---|-----|---------------------------------|
| 11 | سوريا تدين حادثة اغتيال جبران تويني. مصدر إعلامي: من يتهم سوريا يكمل عمل المجرمين و ما صدر عن البعض هو إمعان بتوتير العلاقة السورية-اللبنانية Syria condemns the assassination of Gibran Tueni. Those who accuse Syria are completing the works of the criminals and what has been said by some increases the tension in the Syrian-Lebanese relationship. | 927 | <i>Teshreen</i> , 13/12/2005 |
| 12 | استشهاد النائب اللبناني رئيس مجلس إدارة صحيفة "النهار" جبران تويني The martyrdom of the Lebanese MP and Editor-in-Chief of <i>an-Nahar</i> newspaper, Gibran Tueni. | 320 | NBN, 12/12/2005 |
| 13 | مطالب لبنانية بمحكمة دولية تحقق في اغتيال تويني Lebanon demands international court to investigate the assassination of Tueni. | 476 | Al-Jazeera, 12/12/2005 |
| 14 | دمشق تدين و تشكك في توقيت الجريمة Damascus condemns and doubts the timing of the crime. | 677 | <i>Alarab</i> , 12/12/2005 |
| 15 | تشيع حاشد للنائب المعارض جبران تويني في بيروت Massive funeral procession of opposing MP Gibran Tueni in Beirut. | 512 | BBC Arabic, 12/12/2005 |
| 16 | لبنان ينعى جبران تويني و بعض اللبنانيين يتهمون سوريا Lebanon mourns Gibran Tueni and some accuse Syria. | 556 | Reuters, 13/12/2005 |
| 17 | مقتل النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في اعتداء Killing of Lebanese MP Gibran Tueni in an attack. | 213 | AFP 1, 12/12/2005 |
| 18 | اغتيال النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في انفجار سيارة مفخخة The assassination of Lebanese MP Gibran Tueni in car bomb explosion. | 578 | AFP 2, 12/12/2005 |
| 19 | الحكومة اللبنانية ستطالب بتحقيق دولي في الاغتيالات Lebanese government will demand international investigation into the assassinations. | 536 | CNN 1, 13/12/2005 |
| 20 | مقتل النائب والإعلامي جبران تويني بانفجار بضواحي بيروت Killing of MP and journalist Gibran Tueni in Beirut explosion. | 391 | CNN 2, 11/01/2006 |

Table 4.3 The Description of the Selected News Reports on Tueni's Assassination

Descriptions of the other four groups will be provided in the appendices. In some cases, the Arabic and English news reports collected from the same news source, or media, have the same headlines or wording in the report. The similarities in terms of subject and content of the Arabic and English news reports suggest that these reports could be translated from one language into the other. Many efforts were made to contact the chosen news media and their translation centres in order to investigate this particular issue. However, responses, if any, were unsatisfactory. Most of the contacted sources claim to provide both original and translated news texts without mentioning which are the translations and which are the originals. Given the nature of the corpus and the lack

of communication with contacts in the news media, it was difficult to identify the source (original) texts from the target (translated) texts, i.e. whether the original (source) text is written in Arabic or English, or even to detect signs of translations in English-language and Arabic-language news reports. This has been explained by a Syria News contact as follows: firstly, the production of news reports relies on many news sources and agencies, which may sometimes differ in the production of the Arabic and English texts. This is observed in the study of the selected news media and news reports of the corpus. The presentation of the Arabic news on Al-Jazeera, for example, is different from the English news. Secondly, the editing processes of news reports may result in presenting different news texts for different readers. Being unable to resolve this difficulty and to identify translated and original news reports in the selected corpus, the Arabic and English news reports are viewed as separate and independent news texts rather than in terms of translations.

Halliday's approach has been identified as the model adopted in this study to analyse Theme and Rheme structures in the English and Arabic news reports (section 3.7). However, Halliday's approach has not yet been attempted nor applied to Arabic. The application of Halliday's approach to Arabic-language news reports, especially in terms of the analysis of Verbal and Nominal clauses, is the subject of the next discussion.

4.3 Applying Halliday's Model to Arabic-Language News Reports

4.3.1 Theme-Rheme Redefined

The Hallidayan approach has defined Theme and Rheme according to their position in the sentence, i.e. a Theme always occupies the first position and is commented on and followed by a Rheme (Section 3.4). Following Halliday's (2004) definition, Theme in Modern Standard Arabic¹⁶¹ can be defined as any element which comes first in the clause, i.e. verb, Subject, Complement or Adjunct, and Rheme as whatever comes after the Theme. Halliday (2004) also distinguishes between the unmarked Theme and the marked Theme. According to him (2004), the unmarked Theme represents the basic, most common and most frequent element occurring in Theme position. In English, the Subject of a sentence usually occurs initially indicating an unmarked Theme. In Arabic, however, both verb-initial and noun-initial sentences are commonly used. The choice

¹⁶¹ Modern Standard Arabic (MSA) and Arabic will be used interchangeably in this study.

between Verbal or Nominal¹⁶² clauses depends on two factors: the nature of the language and the nature of the text itself. The first factor relates to the nature of Arabic and the favoured clause type, whether Verbal or Nominal, used by Arabic native speakers and grammarians. Although Arabic uses both Verbal and Nominal sentences, Arabic speakers and all Arab grammarians regard Arabic as a verb-initial language, i.e. a Verbal sentence is the basis of expression in Arabic (section 3.5.1). To be more specific, Verbal sentences with the sequence verb-Subject-Complement-Adjunct represent the most common and unmarked structure in MSA. The second factor relates to the nature of the text itself, or text typology. According to Hatim (1989), the most frequent clause type, Verbal or Nominal, differs according to the type of the selected text. More specifically, the choice between Verbal and Nominal sentence in Arabic is determined by whether the text is expository or argumentative. Nominal sentences, for example, are more common in argumentative texts such as editorials, while Verbal sentences are more common in expository texts such as news reports. Given that the data selected for analysis is of the expository type and the sequence verb-Subject-Complement-Adjunct represents the most common and unmarked word order in Arabic-language news reports¹⁶³, the unmarked Theme can be represented by the lexical verb¹⁶⁴.

However, considering lexical verbs, alone, as unmarked Themes in Arabic-language news reports presents the following challenges. Firstly, due to the syntactic differences between English and Arabic, verbs as unmarked Themes in Arabic are compared with nominal phrases as unmarked and marked Themes in English. This results in incomparable unmarked structures in the analysis of the English and Arabic corpora. Secondly, presuppositions and implications, such as “anti-Syria”, “opponent of Syria” and “opposing Syria”, tend to be nouns, or adjectives, rather than verbs. Thus, they always appear in Rheme position in unmarked Arabic structures, whereas they appear in Theme and Rheme positions of English structures. Thirdly, Arabic news reports

¹⁶² Nominal sentences refer mostly to non-equative sentences, i.e. nominal sentences with a Verb in Rheme position.

¹⁶³ Equative sentences or non-Verbal Nominal sentences in Arabic with the structure Subject + Adjective (see section 3.5.1.) are considered by Arab grammarians as neutral and unmarked for Theme-Rheme structure. Their approach does not consider the type or genre of the text concerned. A different approach to this type of sentence has to be adopted in the present study, depending on the nature of the selected data.

¹⁶⁴ It is also known as a non-finite operator. A finite operator represents modals and auxiliaries (see Halliday 2004). In Arabic, finite operators can be compared to the empty verb “kaana” and its sisters. “Kaana” and its sisters indicate tense in Arabic and when followed by a Subject, the latter functions as the Theme of a nominal clause.

frequently use verbs, such as “say”, “state”, “claim” and “add” in Theme positions. A comparative analysis of these structures in Arabic will not be as productive as in English. These verbs are informationally less significant than other elements in the Arabic clause. They are also thematically and informationally less significant than unmarked Themes in similar structures in English. In other words, verbs, on their own, as unmarked Themes in Arabic are unable to meet the requirement of this study: which is to carry out a comparative analysis of Theme and Rheme in English- and Arabic-language news reports¹⁶⁵. In order to achieve comparability and objective results of Theme-Rheme analysis in English and Arabic news reports, Subjects in Arabic should be accounted for as part of the thematic elements in this analysis. More specifically, a lexical verb followed by a Subject is considered as the unmarked Theme in the analysis of the Arabic-language news reports. This proposition can be supported by Halliday’s analysis of imperative and yes/no interrogative structures in English. In his model, Halliday (2004) includes verbs and Subjects as unmarked Themes of imperative and yes/no clauses, as illustrated in the following examples¹⁶⁶:

- 4.1. Turn it down.
- 4.2. Let us do lunch at the Ivy.
- 4.3. Are they still together?

In the imperative mode, the Subject, covert (example 4.1) or overt (example 4.2), is regarded as part of the unmarked Theme. The unmarked word order in imperative clauses is an implicit Subject followed by a verb in example 4.1, “you turn”, and a verb followed by a Subject, “let us”, in example 4.2. In yes-no interrogatives, the overt pronoun, “they”, functioning as the Subject, is also part of the unmarked Theme. The unmarked word order, in example 4.3, is a verb followed by a Subject. The unmarked Theme in an imperative or yes-no interrogative clauses in English can be regarded as similar to unmarked declarative clauses in Arabic. It can be argued that in Verb-initial languages, such as Arabic, and for the sake of this study, a verb, whether a finite or non-finite operator, can function as part of the whole Theme which includes the Subject¹⁶⁷. Having identified the unmarked Theme and the unmarked sequence of elements in

¹⁶⁵ See Munday (1997) on the analysis of verbs in Spanish and English translation, section (3.4.7).

¹⁶⁶ Examples from Halliday (2004: 76-77).

¹⁶⁷ Unlike Obiedat (1990), the Theme of an Arabic clause which consists of two elements only, like “came Ahmad”, can still be the verb and the Subject. The Rheme of such clauses is considered implicit, because it is either too obvious or something else has referred to it in the context. The presence of the two-element clauses in Arabic news reports is, however, very rare.

Arabic-language news reports, the next section will apply Halliday's classification of marked Themes and marked thematic structures to Arabic-language news reports.

4.3.2 Marked Themes

The sequence verb-Subject-Complement-Adjunct represents the natural and most common structure in Modern Standard Arabic (section 3.5.1). The last section has argued that in Arabic-language news reports an unmarked Theme can be represented by the lexical verb followed by the nominal phrase functioning as the Subject. Any variation of the unmarked order of elements in Arabic-language news reports indicates a marked Theme and a marked thematic structure in the selected data. Following Halliday's (2004) classification of marked Themes in English (section 3.4.6), marked Themes in Arabic-language news reports can be classified under three main types starting from the least marked towards the most marked: fronted Theme, predicated Theme and identifying Theme.

4.3.2.1 Fronted Theme

The fronted Theme involves moving sentence constituents, Subject, Complement, and Adjunct, which do not usually occur initially, into front or Theme position¹⁶⁸. Fronted Themes in MSA are very common in news headlines, as in the following example from the data:

4.4. لبنان ينعي جبران تويني و بعض اللبنانيين يتهمون سوريا¹⁶⁹.

Gloss: [Lebanon mourns Gibran Tueni and some Lebanese accuse Syria.]

Translation: Lebanon mourns Gibran Tueni and some Lebanese accuse Syria.

The fronted Subjects in example 4.4, "Lebanon" and "some Lebanese", function as Themes, while the verb and the Complement, "mourns Gibran Tueni" and "accuse Syria", function as Rhemes. The sequence in the above Arabic main clauses is Subject-verb-Complement and is considered marked in this study¹⁷⁰. The use of Nominal clauses in news headlines in MSA helps to place an emphasis on the Subject (Cantarino

¹⁶⁸ According to Halliday (2004) and Baker (1992) fronted NPs, Subjects and Complements, are considered less marked than fronted Adjuncts in English (prepositions and adverbs). The same classification will be applied in Arabic.

¹⁶⁹ Reuter's headline on 13/12/2005.

¹⁷⁰ Although this sequence is common in Arabic news headline, it will be considered and analysed as marked due to the nature of the Arabic language.

1974 and Keenan and Schieffelin 1976). According to Thaliji (1982: 179), the fronting process in MSA “highlights a certain element, brings it more into focus, thus makes it the prominent or salient element in the sentence”. Fronted Themes may also be used to achieve contrastivity, i.e. when fronted elements provide contrastive information to that mentioned before in a previous discourse or when the Subjects are contrasted to each others in terms of their actions (Abdul-Raof 1998)¹⁷¹. The underlined Theme in example 4.10, “a dog”, which is presented by Abdul-Raof (1998: 53), is contrasted with the subject, “Zaid”, in example 4.5:

4.5. قتل زيد كلباً

Gloss: [Killed Zaid a dog]

Translation: Zaid killed a dog.

4.6. كلبٌ قتل زيداً

Gloss: [A dog killed Zaid]

Translation: A dog killed Zaid.

The contrastive information is conveyed by the fronted Subject, “a dog”, in example 4.6. Another example of fronted Themes is the use of the empty verb, “kaana” and its, so-called, “sisters” in Arabic Nominal sentences (section 3.5.1.), as in the following example:

4.7. كانت سلسلة من الانفجارات هزت لبنان.

Gloss: [Kaanat a series of explosions shook Lebanon.]

Translation: A series of explosions had shaken Lebanon.

The empty verb “kaanat”, one of “kaana’s sisters”, in example 4.7, functions as a grammatical tool, which indicates past tense in the clause¹⁷². According to Arab grammarians, empty verbs occur only in Nominal clauses¹⁷³. Although clause 4.7 starts with a verb followed by a subject, this verb is considered empty, i.e. not lexical, and the clause is Nominal, i.e. not Verbal. Example 4.7 is considered marked in this study. The Theme of example 4.7 is the empty verb, “kaanat” and the Subject “a series of explosions”, and the Rheme is the rest of the clause “had shaken Lebanon”. Adjuncts in

¹⁷¹ This is more common in other genres, such as story telling and dialogues.

¹⁷² Kaana can be compared to finite verbal operators in English, like auxiliaries and modal, see section 3.4.5.

¹⁷³ According to TAGs, kaana and its sisters are indicators of a following Theme and Rheme in Arabic (Abdul-Raof, 1998).

Arabic can also occur in sentence-initial position and thus function as marked, fronted, Themes in Arabic-language news reports, as in the following example:

4.8. ¹⁷⁴ و بعد ساعات من مقتل تويني قال فريق التحقيق...

Gloss: [And after hours from Tueni killing, said the investigation team...]

Translation: Hours after Tueni's killing, the investigation team said...

The fronted Adjunct, “hours after Tueni’s killing”, functions as a marked Theme in example 4.8. The most common place for Adjuncts in Arabic is clause-final position (see section 3.5). The Adjunct in example 4.8 is shifted to clause-front position to set the scene in its relevant framework of time, i.e. the speech of the investigation team regarding and following Tueni’s killing.

4.3.2.2 Predicated Theme

The second type, the predicated Theme, involves foregrounding an element by placing it initially using a cleft structure (see section 3.4.6.2.). Cleft structures in MSA are normally realized by the use of a relative clause immediately after the thematized element (Abdul-Raof 1998). Abdul-Raof (1998: 202) presents the following example of cleft structures in Arabic:

4.9. رئيس الحرس هو الذي هرب¹⁷⁵.

Gloss: [The Chief of guards he who ran away.]

Translation: It was the chief of guards who ran away.

In example 4.9, the nominal phrase (NP) functioning as the Subject, “The chief of guards”, is the predicated Theme of the Arabic clause. The cleft sentence presumes that the hearer/reader knows about the event of running away but does not know about the person involved in the act of running (Abdul-Raof 1998). The thematization of the Subject, “the chief of guards”, provides New information which is assumed to be unknown or misunderstood by the hearer (Abdul-Raof 1998). However, cleft structures may also provide old information, which, according to Prince (1978), is in line with the general convention of thinking, i.e. presenting old information first and new information last. In this case, the Subject of the sentence is already mentioned in a previous context

¹⁷⁴ Reuters Arabic on 13/12/2005.

¹⁷⁵ An example provided by (Abdul-Raof 1998: 202).

but is not expected to have this particular relation with the information or the event provided in that sentence.

4.3.2.3 Identifying Theme

The last and most marked type of Theme is the identifying Theme, also known as thematic equatives or pseudo-cleft structures (section 3.4.6.3.). The identifying Theme uses a wh-structure or an identifying clause placed in first position whose function is to thematize and foreground any element in the clause by means of nominalization¹⁷⁶, as in the following example:

4.10. الذي هرب هو رئيس الحرس.

Gloss: [Who ran away he the chief of guards]

Translation: The one who ran away is the chief of guards.

The pseudo-cleft structure in (4.10) allows the Arabic speaker/writer to highlight an element, such as the verb “run away”, which is normally unmarked in theme position, and turns it into a marked Theme. Unlike predicated Themes, the thematic element of the identifying Theme is usually presented as old information (Halliday 2004). “The one who ran away” in (4.10) is assumed to be old information while “the chief of guards” is unknown information. Although, the analysis of the data shows that cleft and pseudo-cleft structures are not commonly used in Arabic-language news reports, they may still be found in quotations or direct speeches¹⁷⁷. Two examples of pseudo-cleft clauses, from *Teshreen* news media report, are presented below¹⁷⁸:

4. 11. إن من يتهم سوريا يكمل عمل المجرمين.

Gloss: [Inna who accuse Syria complete the work of criminals]

Translation: Those who accuse Syria are completing the work of the criminals.

4.12. إن من وراء هذه التفجيرات هم أعداء لبنان.

Gloss: [Inna who behind these explosions those enemies of Lebanon]

Translation: Those who are behind the explosions are the enemies of Lebanon.

¹⁷⁶Nominalization is a transformational process of a clause in which nouns are derived from verbs and adjectives, see section 4.5.2.1.

¹⁷⁷ The inclusion of the analysis of direct and indirect speeches in the language of news reports will be discussed later in Chapter 5.

¹⁷⁸ *Teshreen*'s news report on the assassination of Tueni on 13/12/2005.

The identifying Themes in examples 4.11 and 4.12 are “those who accuse Syria” and “those who are behind the explosions”, respectively. In the above two examples, known information is presented in Theme positions, underlined, and followed by unknown information presented in Rheme positions, in italics. These two examples, from the state-run Syrian newspaper, *Teshreen*, are illustrations of indirect speech by an official Syrian informational source protesting Syria’s innocence and pronouncing anger with the accusations against it. Both examples use a highly marked thematic and syntactic device, i.e. the pseudo-cleft structure and the emphatic device *inna*. The marked Theme helps to present the speaker’s views concerning the allegations about Syria’s involvement in the assassination of Tueni and the recent explosions in Lebanon. The use of the syntactic device *inna* in initial position helps to emphasise the proposition made by the speaker.

Having presented the three main types of marked Themes in Arabic-language news reports, by drawing on Halliday’s approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in English, the next section will discuss Halliday’s information system in relation to the analysis of the data.

4.4 The Information System in the Analysis of the Data

Halliday (2004) defines Themes and Rhemes according to their positions in the sentence, Theme as “the point of departure for the clause as a message” and Rheme as “the goal of the message” (section 3.4). He also distinguishes between the system of Theme, i.e. Theme and Rheme, and the system of information, i.e. Given and New information. According to Halliday (2004), the interplay between these two systems plays a major role in exploiting the potentials of various rhetorical effects in a given discourse and manoeuvres the message intended behind it. In his words (2004: 93):

Within any given scenario, or set of contextual conditions, the speaker can exploit the potential that the situation defines, using thematic and informational structure to produce an astonishing variety of rhetorical effects. He can play with the system, so to speak. A very frequent type of linguistic game-playing is the use of these two systems to achieve complex manoeuvres of putting the other down, making him feel guilty and the like.

In other words, the mapping of the thematic system on to the informational system, in a given discourse, helps writers/speakers to project certain viewpoints and present certain attitudes towards events in this discourse. Therefore, studying these two systems in the

data can prove helpful in understanding the underlying ideologies and the different stances adopted by different news media and the English- and Arabic-language news reports. It should be noted, however, that Halliday's thematic and informational structures are not necessarily compatible. The Theme-Rheme units operate on the system of the clause, whereas Given-New units operate on a separate grammatical unit, the informational unit (Halliday 1967). The information unit does not correspond to any grammatical unit. It can be a morpheme, a word, a group of words, a phrase or a clause (see section 3.4). The Theme-Rheme units are speaker-oriented, i.e. the speaker/writer chooses, selects and assigns the positions of elements in the clause, whereas, the informational units are listener-oriented, i.e. the listener/reader chooses what element he/she considers known or unknown (Halliday 2004). To put it differently, a Theme-Rheme unit can contain more, or less, than one informational unit, unless the informational unit is parallel to a clause, i.e. Theme conveys Given information and Rheme conveys New information. This suggests that carrying out a comparative analysis of the thematic and informational structures in the data will produce difficulties, ambiguity and uncertainty, especially with concern to marked and incompatible distributions of informational and Theme-Rheme sequences in the clause. Moreover, it is possible to find Given-New and New-Given sequences within one Theme, or Rheme. This leads to uncertainty to whether these elements have marked or unmarked informational structures¹⁷⁹. In addition, the informational units in the data will be very big in number. Even if attempted, it is believed that identifying all informational units and analysing all informational sequences in the data will hardly add to or modify the results of the analysis carried out here. However, since the interaction between these two systems is significant in studying the clause as a message and understanding underlying ideologies in the news, analysing individual key terms - especially those which entail certain implications and present a specific angle of telling a news story (section 4.5.3) - in terms of their predictability and saliency in the context of the selected news, can prove helpful in the analysis of the current study¹⁸⁰.

Having identified the difficulties and suggested a solution to apply Halliday's informational structure to the analysis of the data, the next section will present the methodological tools adopted in the analysis of the selected English and Arabic news reports.

¹⁷⁹ For more details on marked and unmarked informational sequences see section 4.4.2.1.

¹⁸⁰ This will be further discussed in section 4.5.

4.5 Analytical Methods and Tools

The last section has argued that the analysis of the thematic and informational systems, as defined by Halliday (2004), renders too general and ambiguous results in any large body of data. The incompatible structures of Theme and information and the huge number of informational and thematic units to be analysed dictate a focused analysis at the two levels. At the level of information, the analysis focuses on individual key words as Given and New information regardless of their unmarked and marked sequences in the informational unit. The choice of these words as Theme/Rheme and Given/New information by the writers of the news reports plays a significant role in presenting news differently in English- and Arabic-language news reports, as will be argued in the next chapter¹⁸¹. At the thematic level, quantitative and qualitative methods will be carried out to analyse Theme-Rheme structures in main clauses in the data. Although, Halliday (2004) considers Themes and Rhemes to operate at the level of the clause, whether subordinate or main, it is believed that the message intended behind the news journalists' choices and organizations of Themes and Rhemes are more apparent and functional at the level of the main clause¹⁸². Fries (1995: 49) professes that, in his work on Theme, he has "found it useful to deal with a unit slightly larger than the clause, but smaller than the sentence". He (1995) terms this unit as the "independent conjoinable clause complex". This consists of an independent clause plus all of its hypotactically, dependent or subordinate, related clauses. In the case of hypotaxis, only one Theme is analysed for the whole of the clause complex¹⁸³. Since the verb is considered here as part of the thematic elements of the Arabic Verbal clause, the V-S order will be maintained in the translation of the Arabic examples in Chapter 5 (the data analysis). This will help non-Arabic speakers to differentiate between Verbal and Nominal clauses and identify the role of the verb as a thematic or rhematic element. Syntactic devices such *inna* and *kaana* and lexical elements such as *munaahiD* and *munaawi'*, which have no equivalents in English and whose presence may affect the understanding of the Arabic clause and the presentation of information in it, are presented in brackets in these translations. The Qalam system will be adopted in transliterating these devices and elements into English (see appendix F).

¹⁸¹ Further discussions of these terms are presented in chapter 6.

¹⁸² See McCabe (1999) on the choice of the units of analysis in Halliday's approach.

¹⁸³ A clause complex is defined as a number of clauses linked together grammatically (Halliday 2004: 8).

The lexical variations used by the different news reports will be investigated and analysed in terms of Themes and Rhemes in unmarked and marked structures in English- and Arabic-language news reports. They are also studied in relation to global Themes, i.e. Topics, presuppositions, i.e. implication and implicatures, and style, i.e. nominalization and thematization (section 2.3). Key terms, such as “anti-Syria” or “anti-Syrian”, in the data, are better comprehended in relation to similar concepts, such as “opponent of Syria” or “critic of Syria”. The analysis of these terms, the comprehension of their conceptual meanings and implications in the context of the news, and the roles they play in news presentation in English- and Arabic-language news reports, require the use of other linguistic tools, namely lexical variations and meaning relations¹⁸⁴. The following sections will first discuss the methods adopted in this study, followed by the linguistic tools, namely transformational processes, lexical features and meaning relations.

4.5.1 Qualitative and Quantitative Methods

A qualitative analysis aims at a complete detailed description of the linguistic features observed in the data (McEnery and Wilson 1996). It identifies and describes aspects of language use and provides examples of both rare and frequent occurrences. McEnery and Wilson (1996: 62) point out that: “qualitative analysis enables very fine distinction to be drawn since it is not necessary to shoehorn the data into a finite number of classifications”. Qualitative methods recognize different and ambiguous interpretations. The word “red”, for example, can signify a colour or a political categorization, such as communism or socialism (McEnery and Wilson 1996). These different senses of “red” can be recognized in a qualitative analysis. However, the findings of a qualitative analysis cannot be generalizable or extended with the same degree of certainty to wider populations (McEnery and Wilson 1996). The findings can be specific to a particular research and may not be statistically significant.

Quantitative research, on the other hand, provides a statistical analysis of the linguistic features observed in the data. It classifies the features, assigns frequencies and constructs a complex statistical model to explain what is observed in the data. It provides as accurate picture as possible of the tendencies and linguistic varieties observed in the data. McEnery and Wilson (1996: 62) note that:

¹⁸⁴ Implication, entailment and presupposition have been discussed in section 2.3.3.2.

Quantitative analysis thus enables one to separate the weeds from the chaff: it enables one to discover which phenomena are likely to be genuine reflections of the behaviour of a language or variety and which are merely chance occurrences.

Although quantitative research offers reliable, quantifiable and generalizable results, it does not provide as rich an analysis as qualitative research. A quantitative analysis will not be able to recognize the ambiguous interpretation of the word “red”, for example (McEnery and Wilson 1996). The findings cannot always reflect the reality in the data. Idealization has to be entailed in some occasions where the analyst is forced to make decisions. At the same time, a quantitative analysis tends to “sideline rare occurrences” (McEnery and Wilson 1996). Thus, in order to achieve the maximal degree of reliability and objectivity, both quantitative and qualitative methods will be adopted in the analysis of the corpus. For instance, quantitative methods will be adopted to account for the three thematic patterns and identify the most dominant TP in the selected English and Arabic news reports. Quantitative methods will also be adopted to account for the use of the different lexical terms, linguistic variations and nominalization in the thematic structures of the data. This will help to identify which elements receive much thematic and informational focus and in which news reports¹⁸⁵. Qualitative methods will be adopted to analyse the thematic structures which describe Syria’s alleged involvement in the Lebanese assassinations and the way it is portrayed in the English and Arabic news reports. In addition to the analysis of thematic patterns and Theme-Rheme structures, other related tools will also be adopted in the analysis of the thematic structures in the corpus. The next section will discuss these tools, namely the transformational processes of thematization and nominalization, lexical variations and meaning relations.

4.5.2 Transformational Processes

A clause may undergo a number of transformational processes such as thematization and nominalization (Fowler et al. 1979). Transformational processes are considered of major interest to the study of the chosen data as they are related to the choice of Themes and Rhemes and the organization of these elements in the clause. They can also help to investigate the underlying ideologies in the thematic structures in the Arabic- and English-language news reports. Section 4.5.2.1 will focus on the first process of transformation, namely thematization.

¹⁸⁵ For more details see sections 5.3 and 5.4.

4.5.2.1 Thematization

The process of thematization is related to the idea of Theme and Rheme. Thematization is the process by which some parts of the clause, such as the Complement, are placed in Theme position (Fowler et al. 1979), as in the following examples:

4.13. Rioting blacks are shot dead¹⁸⁶.

4.14. Gibran Tueni assassinated by car bomb. (NBN Arabic news headline)¹⁸⁷

“Rioting blacks” in example 4.13 is the Theme of the passive surface structure. “Rioting blacks” occupies the first position in clause (4.13) and it functions as the object or the affected participant in the recovered deep structure:

4.15. The police shot dead **rioting blacks**.

“Gibran Tueni”, in example 4.14 is the Theme of the passive surface structure. “Gibran Tueni” occupies the first position in clause (4.14) and functions as the object or the affected participant in the recovered deep structure. The actor, or the “logical Subject”, as referred to by Halliday (2004), in example (4.14) is deleted because it is unknown to both writers and readers. The Theme in example 4.14 attracts the readers’ attention to the main event of the news story. It also reveals New information, which is not predicted nor mentioned before in the news report. Thematization can also be ideologically motivated, especially “thematization through passivization”, i.e. when the actor is deleted and the affected participants become the Theme, as Fowler et al. (1979: 41) note:

Rather than just clouding the relational responsibilities of the deep structure (who does what to whom) it [Syntax] may actually reverse the distribution of rights and duties. Thus someone who has something done to him by another can be made responsible for his own suffering... A very useful linguistic device for suggesting this reversal is *thematization* through passivization. (Italics in original)

The actor, “the police”, which occupies the Theme position in clause (4.15), is deleted and substituted by the patient “blacks” in example (4.13). “Blacks” is not only thematized but also premodified by an adjective, “rioting”, which makes the patient seem responsible for his own fate. Although this method has been criticized for focusing on certain aspects of texts and fitting interpretations to them (section 2.5.4), it is believed that the analysis of thematization, along with Theme-Rheme and Given-New

¹⁸⁶ This example is from Fowler et al. (1979).

¹⁸⁷ NBN Arabic news headline, Group 1 of the data (see appendix).

structures in the data, can help to raise the readers' consciousness of the various ways of presenting the news. More specifically, thematization, especially when is presented as New information, draws the attention to elements which are both thematically and informationally significant. This can help to explore the ideological differences in news presentation in English and Arabic news reports.

The next section deals with the second type of transformational process, thematization, and its role in news presentation in the data.

4.5.2.2 Nominalization

Nominalization is a transformational process of a clause in which nouns are derived from verbs and adjectives, i.e. predicates (Halliday 2004). In the process of nominalization, a whole clause is reduced into one word, or one noun, and other elements are deleted. Fowler et al. (1979: 39) refers to this process as follows: "Nominalization is a transformation which reduces a whole clause to its nucleus, the verb and turns that into a noun". Examples of nominalization are:

4.16. The **development** of machines helps industry.

4.17. **Freedom** is the answer.

The noun "development", which functions as the Theme (4.16), is derived from the verb "develop". "Development" as a nominal process implies that "someone *develops* something". The original clause is reduced to a single word or noun, "development". In the same way, "freedom", which functions as the Theme (4.17), is a noun derived from the adjective "free" and implies a transformational process of the clause "somebody is *free*" (Fowler et al. 1979). These nouns, "development" and "freedom", are called derived nominals. In the process of nominalization, three elements are deleted: participants (patients or agents), tense (the indication of time) and modality, the writer's attitudes towards certain events or participants and his/her expressions of reality. In the transformation of "someone develops something" into the noun "development", for example, the participant or the doer of the action, "someone", is deleted. The derived noun "development" has no indication of time, whether the event happened in the past, "developed", in the present, "develop" or "is developing", or in the future "will develop". Finally, modality and expressions of attitudes are also deleted

in transforming, for instance, “someone *should* be free” into *freedom*. Fowler (1979: 41) defines nominalization as:

Nominalization is a process of syntactic reduction, as well as potential relexicalization. The personal participants, the ‘someone’ whoever they may be, are deleted as the clause turns into a noun; so is modality (thus many potential ‘mays’ and ‘shalls’ disappear).

Deletion can be carried out when participants or other parts of the clause are already known to the reader or when they are of less significance to the context. However, deleting participants, modality and tense may result in the missing of some meanings in the clause (Fairclough 2001). Thus, deletion can be intended to draw attention away from the real agent of the action. Fowler et al. (1979: 43) note that:

Nominalization of verbs permits deletion of reference to the persons responsible for and affected by the processes described by the verbs; nominalization can depersonalize, depopulate.

In other words, the study of derived nominals can play an important role in raising the reader’s consciousness to the different angles of telling a story. The analysis of nominalization in the data can offer an ideological understanding of news presentation in Arabic and English because information and attributions of responsibility can go unexpressed. Examples of recurring nominalization in the selected data are “cooperation”, “accusation”, “explosion”, “attack” and “bombing”. These nominalizations differ in the degree of attributing a human actor responsible for the deleted action (see section 5.4). They will be investigated in terms of Theme-Rheme and Given-New structures in the data. The analysis will also explore whether certain news reports, or news media, favour particular derived nominals more than the others. To put it differently, the analysis will explore whether attributions of responsibility and human agency is more apparent in certain news reports, or news media, than the other, as will be shown in section 5.4.

Having discussed the processes of nominalization and thematization, the next section will present the next linguistic tools and their relevance to the analysis of the selected data.

4.5.3 Lexical Features and Meaning Relations

The study of lexical features and meaning relations, also referred to as stylistic variations (section 2.3.4), in the thematic structures of English and Arabic clauses is a significant factor in exploring the different ideologies in the language of the news. In this study, lexical variations will be analysed in terms of Theme-Rheme and Given-New information and will be investigated in terms of Theme-Rheme and Given-New information in an attempt to elucidate underlying views and ideologies in the selected news reports. Seven categories are discussed here in relation to lexical variations, namely lexicalization, relexicalization, overlexicalization, collocation, direct repetition, synonyms and antonyms. Lexicalization, or wording, is defined by Fowler (1991:82) as “a representation of the world *for* [his italics] a culture; the world as perceived according to the ideological needs of a culture”. Lexical variations differ from one culture to another and according to the ideological needs of the people of the same culture. It is, thus, a cultural means of communicating ideas, processes and relationships. According to Fowler (1991), lexicalization is the use of specific words or classes of words (verbs, nouns, adjectives, adjectives ending with –ing or –ed) to represent reality. The use of the term “hooligan”, for instance, differs from “hooliganism” in that “hooligan” refers to a participant who is made responsible for his/her action, whereas “hooliganism” refers to the process itself without attributing any responsibility to the person involved (Fowler et al. 1979). Thus, the two wordings are different in terms of their ideological significance (Fowler et al. 1979). Similar examples are identified in the analysis of the data (see section 5.4). The use of “accusation”, for instance, in reference to Syria’s involvement in the killing of the Lebanese politicians indicates a process rather than attributes responsibility for the ones behind these accusations. The presentation of “accusation” in the data as known or unknown information can contribute to the way news reports perceive these accusations. In other words, news reports can choose to emphasise “accusation” as New information or deemphasise it by presenting it as old and background information. The thematization of “accusation” as New information can also be significant in that the selected Theme receives more thematic and informational focus than other elements in the clause. Similarly, Halliday (1971: 335) refers to an aspect of lexicalization called the “taxonomic organization of vocabulary”. For Halliday, vocabulary has an influence over the experience of language users and the way they classify and categorize the world around them. In other words, users of different languages have different opinions

and world-views, i.e. the social construction of reality made by language speakers differs from one language to another. This idea also relates to Sapir-Whorf hypothesis, which claims that speakers of different languages view the world differently. However, language users are not always at the mercy of their language. They have the ability to create and invent through language (Fish 1981). Therefore, lexical analysis can help reveal the different representations of reality and the different ideological stances in language use, especially in news reports. Lexical analysis is ideologically significant not only when words occur individually but also when they are clustered together to mark different ideas and topics (Fowler 1991). Lexical terms, such as “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying”, for example, are used in the data to describe the death of Lebanese politicians in the series of explosions taking place in Lebanon. The different implications associated with their use can be helpful in understanding the different ideologies in news presentations, as will be discussed in Chapter 5.

When new terms are introduced in a language, this process is called relexicalization. Relexicalization, or rewording, is defined as the introduction of a new term to present a new idea. Relexicalization is “the promotion of a new term where it is claimed that a new concept is at issue” (Fowler 1991: 85). In other words, relexicalization is the “process of coding experience in new ways by inventing lexical items” (Fowler et al. 1979: 33). In the following example, “Iraqi *militants* bombed several schools in Basra”, the term “militants” is an instance of relexicalization, used here to describe some Iraqi soldiers who are rebellious and working against the law. Studying relexicalization especially in news reports can help to reveal the political views and stands of news media and news discourse.

The third lexical process is overlexicalization, or overwording. Overlexicalization involves the “existence of an excess of quasi-synonymous terms for entities and ideas that are a particular preoccupation or problem in the culture’s discourse” (Fowler 1991: 85). In other words, overwording or overlexicalization is the use of terms which are charged with meaning, mostly pejorative and negative meanings, such as “terrorist” and “tyrannical” in the following examples:

4.18. *Terrorists* plan to attack the US embassy.

4.19. Saddam Hussein, the *tyrannical* leader, allowed no democracy in his country.

Overlexicalization can be ideologically significant in analysing the language of the news. It also helps to change the readers' attitudes towards certain events or entities (Fowler et al. 1979). Examples of overlexicalization from the data are "slaying" and "anti-Syrian".

Direct repetition means repeating exactly the same words several times in the text (Reah 2002). It is also a cohesive device which holds discourse together and ensures the surface structure continuity (Fairclough 2001 and Halliday 2004). Discourse hangs together grammatically by virtue of using markers, such as "and", "or", and "but", and linguistically by virtue of using repetition, synonyms, and antonyms¹⁸⁸ (Fairclough 2001 and Halliday 2004). Direct repetition can be used to emphasise a certain view point and to highlight the significance of a certain incident in news reports, such as the repetition of "new evidence" in some English news reports in reference to the recent killings in Lebanon and the possible involvement of Syrian members. Repetition can also be ideologically motivated, especially in news reports, to assert the reporters', or the news media's, political stand towards a certain subject or event, such as the repetition of "cooperation" of Syria and the "accusation" against Syria in the data. However, when similar and opposite meanings of words are used in discourse, these are called synonyms and antonyms, respectively. Synonyms and antonyms also function as linguistic cohesive devices. Synonymous words are defined as words which have almost the same meaning. However, absolute synonyms are rare in any language (Fairclough 2001). This is illustrated in the following examples:

4.20. Arabs demand a *fair* trial of Saddam Hussein.

4.21. A *just* trial of the Iraqi leader is required.

4.22. Saddam's trial has to be *legitimate*.

The words "fair", "just" and "legitimate" are synonymous words which are used to highlight the idea of having or demanding a fair trial of the Iraqi leader. The concept of synonyms is related to Daneš's continuous Themes, where one Theme is maintained in a series of clauses in discourse¹⁸⁹. On the other hand, antonymous words refer to opposite meaning relations. Antonyms are defined as "meaning incompatibility – the meaning of one word is incompatible with the meaning of another" (Fairclough 2001: 97). Examples of antonyms are words such "like" and "hate" and "democracy" and

¹⁸⁸ Synonyms and antonyms are discussed later in this section.

¹⁸⁹ See Abdul-Raof (1998) for further discussion.

“tyranny”. Finally, collocation is defined as the study of how words co-occur or collocate together. Collocation may sometimes affect the meaning of individual words, i.e. a new meaning can be introduced through the combination of the two words (Fairclough 2001: 95). Some newspapers, for example, tend to associate the word “terrorists” with “Arab” or “Islamic”. Examples of collocations from the data are terms such as “anti-Syria”, “opponent of Syria” and “critic of Syria” which are associated with Lebanese politicians who resisted Syria’s interference and were assassinated in Lebanon.

4.6 Concluding Remarks

This chapter has introduced the selected corpus and described methods of data collection and analysis. Halliday’s model of Theme-Rheme has been applied to Arabic-language news reports and modified to meet the requirements of this study, namely carrying out a comparative analysis of the thematic structures in the selected data. Accordingly, the lexical verb and the following Subject in Arabic clauses are considered as unmarked Themes in the Arabic-language news reports. The application of Halliday’s approach to the selected corpus offers the following advantages:

- Unlike the traditional approach, sentence analysis can be carried out in both Arabic Verbal and Nominal sentences
- The identification of Theme and Rheme in the selected data is consistent and straightforward because sentence elements are always defined according to their positions
- Verbal elements are no longer analysed as Transitions, as is the case with the modern Arab linguists’ approach, but as Themes in unmarked Verbal sentences, and Rhemes, or part of the Rhemes, in marked Nominal sentences
- Objects and Adjuncts occurring in sentence initial positions in MSA can be accounted for as Marked Themes
- The marked thematic structures presented by Halliday (2004) help identify and clarify the structural differences in news presentation in English and Arabic
- Halliday’s approach offers a generalizable and unifying method of analysis by which Theme-Rheme structures can be analysed and compared objectively and equally in both Arabic- and English-language news reports

The model adapted in this study considers the main clause, or the clause complex, as the thematic unit of analysis. Following McCabe (1999) and Fries (1995), and for the reasons mentioned in section 4.5, subordinated and projected clauses are not accounted for in this analysis. The informational analysis focuses on individual key terms, implications, nominalization and lexical variations which are analysed as Given and New information in marked and unmarked thematic structures in the data. This chapter also presents other analytical tools in relation to the notion of ideology. In addition to the analysis of Theme-Rheme elements and Given-New information, this study will investigate thematization, nominalization and lexical variations in the thematic and informational structures of the data. The next chapter will apply these tools to the analysis of the English-and Arabic-language news reports.

CHAPTER FIVE

DATA ANALYSIS

Chapter 4 identified Halliday's approach as the model adopted in this study to analyse Theme-Rheme structures in the selected English- and Arabic-language news reports. It discussed the application of this model to Arabic Verbal and Nominal structures considering the verb in verb-initial clauses as part of the thematic elements. Chapter 4 also identified the difficulties involved in analysing the informational and thematic structures as presented by Halliday's approach. It considers the main clause, or clause complex, as the thematic unit of Theme/Rheme analysis and individual words as the informational unit of Given/New analysis. This chapter presents the analysis of the data and investigates the efficacy of the developed model, methods and tools in elucidating underlying ideologies, especially in relation to the way Syria is presented by mainstream online news media reports. The aims of this chapter are identified as follows:

1. to analyse the thematic structures at the global level and identify the Thematic Progression patterns, global themes and macropropositions in the English- and Arabic-language news reports
2. to analyse the thematic structures at the clause level and investigate the ideological representations of Syria in these structures
3. to analyse terms of opposition used to describe Lebanese politicians who are against Syria's policy and its interference in Lebanon and investigate the thematic and informational roles, implications and ideological significance of these terms in presenting Syria differently in the data
4. to analyse the different choices of nominalization and thematization in the thematic structures and investigate the thematic and informational roles, implications and ideological significance of these choices in presenting the news differently in the data

5.1 The Analysis of Global Structures

This section aims at investigating the global structures of the English and Arabic news reports. More specifically, it identifies the Thematic Progression patterns in the data, analyses the macrostructures (global topics, macropropositions and headlines) in a case study and investigates their roles in constructing social meanings, realities and

representations in relation to the Syria-Lebanon relationship. The analysis follows Halliday's developed approach to identify Themes and Rhemes at the clause level, Daneš's Thematic Progression patterns to organize these elements at the text level and van Dijk's macrostructural model. For reasons of simplicity and clarity, the thematic patterns will be identified in the case study. This helps readers to understand the analytical procedures followed in the analysis of TP in the five groups of the data and the findings presented in it. Section 5.1.1 will study the global structures in the English- and Arabic-language news reports of the case study. Section 5.1.2 will present the thematic patterns in all of the five groups of the data and discuss the findings of this analysis.

5.1.1 A Case Study of News Reports on Hariri's Murder Probe

Daneš's thematic patterns are applied to group two of the data, namely 12 English- and Arabic-language news reports dealing with Hariri's murder probe published in September 2006. The thematic patterns, global themes, macropropositions and headlines which constitute the global structures of discourse will be investigated in six English-language news reports and their equivalent reports in Arabic. The global structures of the English-language news reports will be identified and analysed in section 5.1.1.1. Section 5.1.1.2 will identify and analyse the global structures of the Arabic-language news reports in group 2 of the data.

5.1.1.1 The Analysis of the English News Reports

The English-language news reports dealing with Hariri's murder probe are *Syria Times*' "Syria's cooperation appreciated", Al-Manar's "UN probe report details fresh evidence on Hariri's murder", Al-Jazeera's "Hariri inquiry confirms suicide bomb", *Alarab*'s "Hariri's murder probe nearer to trial, BBC's "Hariri 'killed by suicide bomber'" and CNN's "New leads in Hariri probe" (see appendix B). The six English news reports are presented in tables organizing main clauses into Theme and Rheme elements. The whole report is presented in a table in order to illustrate the figures and findings discussed later in this section. The first news report is from *Syria Times* entitled "Syria's cooperation appreciated". Table 5.1 presents the Themes and Rhemes in main clauses of this report.

| <i>Syria Times</i> | Theme | Rheme |
|--------------------|---|---|
| 1. | Syria cooperation | appreciated |
| 2. | Serge Brammertz, Chief of International Investigation Committee, | handed his 5 th report, regarding the murder of former Lebanese Prime Minister, Rafiq Hariri, to UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan yesterday morning. |
| 3. | News agencies | reported that Brammertz made clear in his report Syria's assistance was satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of his committee within time frame allocated. |
| 4. | During his meeting with Foreign Minister Walid Moualem yesterday, | UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan expressed his gratitude to Syria for her cooperation with the committee. |

Table 5.1 Theme-Rheme Organization in *Syria Times* Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Main clauses in Table 5.1 and the tables in this section are numbered according to their sequences in the news report. Number 1 on the left-hand side of the table refers to the first main clause in the *Syria Times* English news report. Clause 1, in bold face, presents the news headline. The Theme of the first main clause, "Syria's cooperation", is referred to as T1, and the Rheme of the first main clause, "appreciated" is referred to as R2. Number 2 refers to the second main clause. T2 is "Serge Brammertz, Chief of International Investigation Committee". R2 is "handed his fifth report regarding the murder of former Lebanese Prime Minister, Rafiq Hariri, to UN Security Secretary-General Kofi Annan yesterday morning". The organization of the thematic and rhematic elements in Table 5.1 shows none of the three thematic patterns identified by Daneš, namely simple linear progression, continuous Theme or derived Themes (see section 3.3.4). The Theme of each main clause in Table 5.1 displays New information which is not previously mentioned in the report. A distinction should be made between news headlines and global themes (see section 2.3.3.1). News headlines are presented from the news producers' point of view, whereas global themes and macropropositions present the readers' understanding of the news discourse. In other words, news headlines are social and discursive properties, whereas global themes and macropropositions are cognitive properties of news discourse. A global theme – also referred to as a global topic, is the most dominant topic and most important information which may or may not be presented in the headline (section 2.3.3). Macropropositions are the main topics, subjects, or themes presented in a news report. In *Syria Times*' report here, two macropropositions are identified: Brammertz' report on Hariri's murder and Syria's cooperation with the investigation. From the readers' perspective, Brammertz's report on Hariri's murder investigation is the most important information

here, i.e. the global theme. From the writers' perspective, however, it is the "appreciation" of "Syria's cooperation" which is presented as the most important information in this report. The global theme, "Brammertz's report", is not presented in the news headlines of *Syria Times*. By focusing on Syria's cooperation and the appreciation of the UN Secretary-General, both in the headline and the report, *Syria Times* constructs a subject position where ideal readers accept the proposition that Syria is not involved in Hariri's murder. The analysis here shows an ideological representation which aims at constructing a positive picture of Syria and a certain social reality.

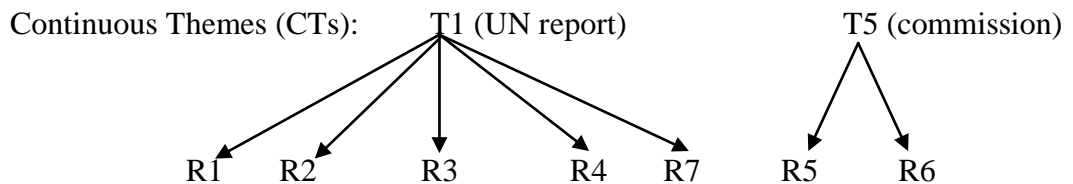
The second news report is Al-Manar's "UN probe report details fresh evidence on Hariri murder". Al-Manar English news report is presented in Table 5.2. Main clauses are also organized into thematic and rhematic elements and numbered according to their sequences in the report.

| Al-Manar | Theme | Rheme |
|-----------------|--|---|
| 1. | UN probe report | details fresh evidence on Hariri murder |
| 2. | A UN report released Monday | cited fresh evidence that a suicide bomber detonated up to 1.8 tons of explosives to kill Lebanese ex-premier Rafiq Hariri last year and noted further Syrian cooperation with the probe. |
| 3. | The interim report by United Nations chief investigator Serge Brammertz also | expanded on links previously found between the Hariri slaying and some 14 other attacks against Lebanese figures between October 2004 and December 2005. |
| 4. | The report, which Brammertz personally delivered to Annan, | estimated that a suicide bomber detonated up to 1800 kg of explosives, placed in a Mitsubishi van, during the February 2005 attack that killed Hariri and 22 others on the Beirut seafront. |
| 5. | "The commission | continues to finalize its primary crime scene work, including its forensic research and analysis, |
| 6. | And | is satisfied that it has largely established the facts to an evidential standard," the report said. |
| 7. | The UN report which was relayed to the 15 members of the UN Security Council before it was made public, also | said UN investigators remained generally satisfied with the cooperation of Syria. |
| 8. | "The cooperation that the commission has received from the Syrian Arab republic | has remained generally satisfactory. |

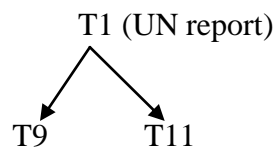
| | | |
|-----|--|--|
| 9. | A controversial report by Brammertz's German predecessor, Detlev Mehlis, | had implicated senior officials from Syria. |
| 10. | Damascus strongly | denies any connection with the Hariri assassination |
| 11. | Brammertz, a Belgian prosecutor, | was expected to brief the council on Friday about his latest findings. |

Table 5.2 Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Manar English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Three thematic patterns are identified in Table 5.2, continuous Themes, derived Themes and simple linear progression. The Theme of the first main clause (T1), "UN probe report", which is also the news headline, functions as a continuous Theme in clauses 2, 3, 4, and 7. The Theme of the fifth main clause (T5), "the commission", is also the Theme of the sixth main clause. T1 also functions as a hyper Theme from which the Theme of the ninth main clause (T9), "the controversial report by Brammertz's German predecessor, Detlev Mehlis" is derived. T11, "Brammertz", the UN chief investigator in Hariri's murder, is derived from T1, "the UN report". The simple linear progression patterns are identified in the Rheme of the seventh main clause (R7), "the cooperation of Syria", which becomes the Theme of the eighth main clause. R9, "had implicated senior officials from Syria", also becomes T10, "Damascus strongly". The three thematic patterns identified in Al-Manar English news report can be presented in the following figure adopted from Daneš (1964):



Hyper Theme (HT):



Derived Themes (DT): (controversial report) (Brammertz)

Simple Linear Progression (SLP):

R7 → T8

R9 → T10

Figure 5.1 Thematic Patterns in Al-Manar English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Figure 5.1 shows that Al-Manar English news report has two continuous Themes, two derived Themes and two instances of simple linear progression. The continuous Theme of the first main clause, T1, forms a dominant thematic pattern in Al-Manar English news report. According to Halliday (2004), continuous themes help as cohesive devices which link clauses together and relate them to the text as a whole. The Al-Manar English news report thematizes the “UN report” in five main clauses. According to Figure 5.1, the “UN report” is the most dominant theme, i.e. the global topic, in Al-Manar’s report. The following macropropositions are indentified here: Brammertz delivers his report to the UN, Hariri’s’ murder investigation, evidence on Hariri’s murder, the cooperation of Syria with the UN investigation, Syria’s alleged involvement in Hariri’s murder and Syria’s denial of its involvement. The analysis of Al-Manar’s report shows that it focuses on the “fresh evidence” on Hariri’s murder and presents this in the headline. The cooperation or involvement of Syria is presented as less dominant and less important.

The third news report dealing with Hariri’s murder probe led by the UN investigator Serge Brammertz is Al-Jazeera’s “Hariri inquiry confirms suicide bomb”. The English report is presented in Table 5.3 below.

| Al-Jazeera | Theme | Rheme |
|-------------------|---|--|
| 1. | Hariri inquiry | confirms suicide bomb |
| 2. | Fresh tests | support the belief that the truck blast that killed Rafiq al-Hariri, the former Lebanese Prime Minister, was carried out by a suicide bomber, UN investigators have said. |
| 3. | The bomber, believed to be a man aged between 20 and 25 who was not from Lebanon, | detonated the explosives weighing about 1800 kg in a minivan and in the blast that killed 22 other people, according to UN report. |
| 4. | “The commission | has identified a considerable number of new leads for investigation relating to the crime scene...”, the report said. |
| 5. | Investigators | said they had found 32 pieces of remains from the man believed to have bombed al-Hariri’s convoy as it wound through Beirut in February last year. |
| 6. | Evidence found at the scene of the blast also | included a tooth, probably of the bomber, which featured an unspecified “distinguishing mark” on its crown suggesting that he may not have been from Lebanon, the report said. |

| | | |
|-----|---|---|
| 7. | Investigators | said Syria had been generally co-operative with the investigation. |
| 8. | John Bolton, the US ambassador to the UN, | said it looked as though Serge Brammertz, a senior Belgian judge heading the investigation, appeared to be nearly ready to present the case in court. |
| 9. | “He | is getting closer and closer to a trial...”, Bolton said. |
| 10. | Brammertz’s predecessor as chief of the investigation, Detlev Mehlis, a German, | had said the killing’s complexity suggested that the Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri’s assassination |
| 11. | In one report, | Mehlis had implicated...Syria’s military intelligence chief ... |
| 12. | Brammertz | said evidence suggested that the team planning al-Hariri’s assassination had him under surveillance. |
| 13. | At one point, | the attackers either tried to kill al-Hariri or carried out a rehearsal. |
| 14. | Al-Hariri | was a quiet opponent to Syria’s 30-year dominance of Lebanon. |
| 15. | His killing | provoked an international outcry and led to Syria withdrawing thousands of troops from Lebanon in April 2005. |
| 16. | Al-Hariri supporters | blamed the attack on Syria, which has denied any role. |

Table 5.3 Theme-Rheme Organization of Al-Jazeera English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Theme-Rheme organization in Table 5.2 shows that the Theme of the fifth main clause (T5), “investigators”, is the same as the Theme of the seventh main clause (T7). The Theme of the ninth main clause (T9), “Brammertz”, is the same as the Theme of the twelfth main clause (T12). T5 and T9 are continuous Themes in Al-Jazeera English news report. T5 is a hyper Theme from which T9 and T10 are derived. “Brammertz”, T9, and “Detlev Mehlis”, T10, are two major UN investigators in Hariri’s murder probe. T14, “Al-Hariri”, is another hyper Theme from which T15, “his killing” and T16, “Al-Hariri’s supporters”, are derived. Simple linear progression patterns are also identified in Table 5.3. The Rheme of the second main clause, “a suicide bomber”, becomes the Theme of the following main clause (T3), “the bomber”. The Rheme of the eighth main clause, “Serge Brammertz, a senior Belgian judge heading the investigation”, becomes the Theme of the ninth main clause, “he”. The Rheme of the 13th main clause (R13), “al-Hariri”, becomes T14. The three thematic patterns identified in Al-Jazeera English news report are presented in Figure 5.2 below:

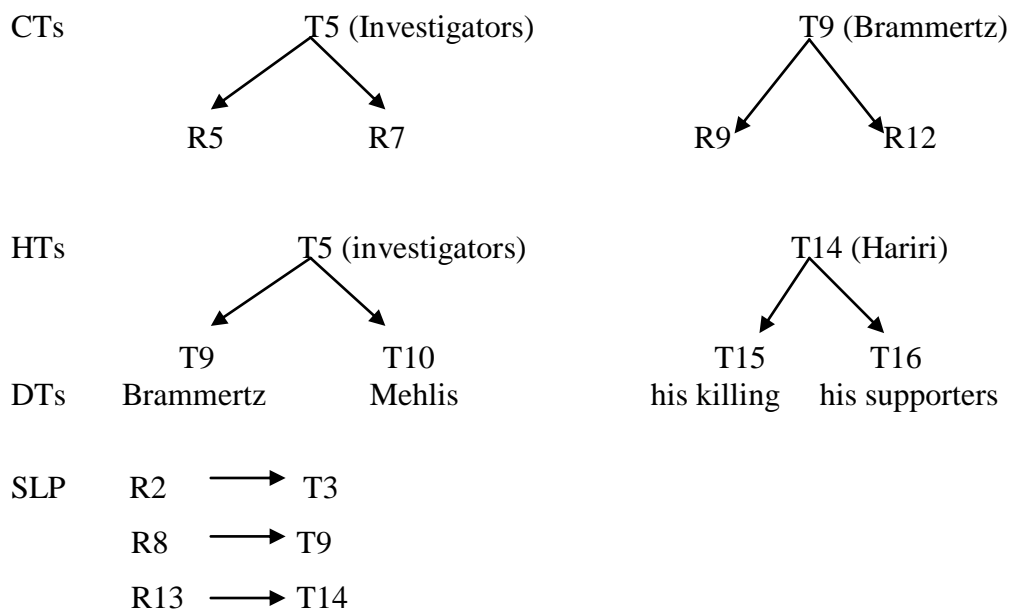


Figure 5.2 Thematic Patterns in Al-Jazeera English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Figure 5.2 shows that the thematic patterns which are identified in Al-Jazeera English report are two continuous Themes, four derived Themes and three instances of simple linear progression pattern. According to Figure 5.2, the “UN investigators” and “Hariri” are two dominant Themes in Al-Jazeera’s report. The global theme here is Brammertz’s inquiry into Hariri’s murder. Five macropropositions can be identified in this report: a suicide bomber killed Hariri, evidence on Hariri’s murder, details of the UN investigation, the implication of Syria in Hariri’s murder, Hariri and his supporters’ political views. The Al-Jazeera’s headline focuses on the evidence that a “suicide bomb” killed Hariri and presents this as the most important information in the report. The evidence and details presented in this report suggest that the investigation is “nearer to a trial” and the perpetrators have been identified and will soon be brought to justice – until now the investigation and its findings have not been concluded.

The fourth English news report in group 2 is *Alarab*’s news report “Hariri murder probe nearer to trial”. The thematic and rhematic elements of the main clauses in this report are presented in Table 5.4.

| <i>Alarab</i> | Theme | Rheme |
|---------------|---|--|
| 1. | Hariri murder probe | nearer to trial |
| 2. | The UN investigator into the slaying of Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq al-Hariri | said on Monday he was close to amassing evidence in the case that would stand up in court. |

| | | |
|-----|--|--|
| 3. | Serge Brammertz, the Belgian leading the inquiry into the 2005 bombing that killed Hariri and 22 others, | said his work over the last three months focused on “those who participated at different levels in the perpetration of this crime”. |
| 4. | Syrian cooperation | “remains an important component of the ongoing work” of his staff, Brammertz said in a progress report to the UN security Council, which ordered the inquiry. |
| 5. | But the report | did not identify any suspects, focusing instead on technical aspects of the ongoing detective work |
| 6. | Earlier reports by Brammertz’s predecessor, German Detlev Mehlis, | implicated senior Syrian officials in the killing. |
| 7. | Brammertz | said his team had submitted 11 formal requests for assistance in the Syrian government over the past three months, “seeking information and documentation about certain individuals and groups” and other materials. |
| 8. | The UN team | conducted another 11 interviews in Syria during the latest reporting period, including of an unspecified number of government officials, the report said, without naming them. |
| 9. | In April, | they had interviewed Syrian President Bashar al-Assad and Vice President Farouq al-Shara. |
| 10. | The UN team | “continues to finalize its primary crime scene work and is satisfied that it has largely established the facts to an evidential standard,” said the latest report. |
| 11. | The team | had also established to “an evidential standard” information on the political environment surrounding Hariri at the time of his murder, it said. |
| 12. | The inquiry also | reaffirmed an earlier suspicion that a series of 14 other politically motivated killings in Lebanon that followed the Hariri slaying were linked in some ways, their report said. |
| 13. | John Bolton, the US ambassador to the United Nations, | said the report’s reference to establishing the facts “to an evidential standard” signalled that Brammertz was “getting closer and closer to the point where he would be ready for a trial. |
| 14. | The UN team’s ability to look at all 15 killings | could turn up patterns that might help determine how they were carried out and by whom, Bolton told reporters. |
| 15. | Hariri | was killed along with 22 others by a huge bomb in broad daylight...as his motorcade travelled along a Beirut street. |
| 16. | Investigators | said they were looking at new evidence that Hariri’s killers had carefully monitored his movements before acting and possibly even conducted a rehearsal of the attack. |

| | | |
|-----|------|---|
| 17. | They | reiterated their belief that Hariri was killed when his convoy passed by a Mitsubishi van packed with a charge equivalent to around 1800kg of TNT that was detonated by a suicide bomber either inside or directly in front of the van. |
|-----|------|---|

Table 5.4 Theme-Rheme Organization in *Alarab* English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Table 5.4 shows that “Hariri murder probe”, T1, functions as a continuous Theme in the first and the twelfth main clauses of *Alarab* English report. “Brammertz”, T2, functions as a continuous Theme in the second, third and seventh main clauses in Table 5.4. “The UN team” investigating Hariri’s murder functions as a continuous Theme in main clauses 8, 10, 11, 14, 16 and 17. Only one instance of simple linear progression is identified in *Alarab* English news report. Part of the Rheme of the fourth main clause (R4), “in a progress report to the UN Security Council”, becomes the Theme of the next main clause, “but the report” (T5). The thematic patterns, in *Alarab* English news report, are presented in the following figure:

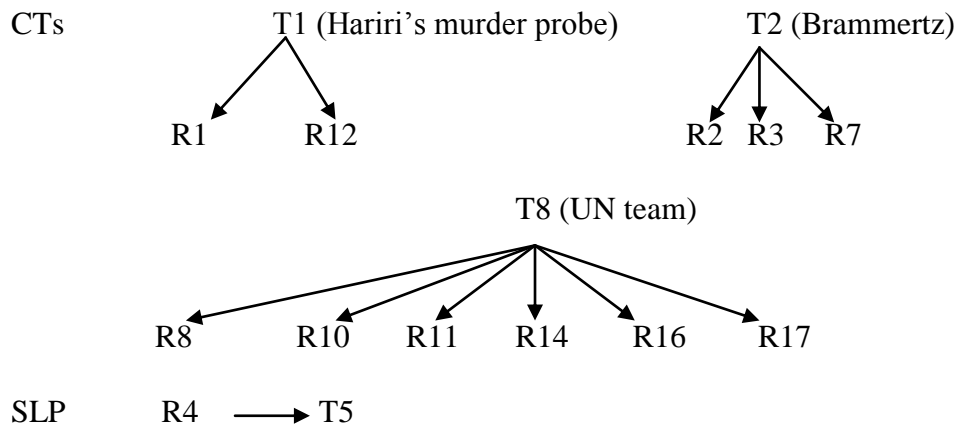


Figure 5.3 Thematic Patterns in *Alarab* English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Figure 5.3 shows that the *Alarab* English report on Hariri’s murder has three continuous Themes and one simple linear progression. T8, “the UN team”, functions as a dominant Theme in this report. At the global level of discourse, “Hariri’s murder probe” is the global topic and is presented in the headline. Four macropropositions can be identified here: Brammertz’s investigation is ready for a trial, Syria’s reluctance to cooperate with the UN investigation team, the implication of Syrian officials in Hariri’s murder and the UN conducting interviews in Syria. The report also focuses on the establishment of facts to “an evidential standard” in Brammertz’s investigation (see clauses 2, 10, 11, 13 and 16 in Table 5.4). Details regarding the nature of this new evidence have been

presented briefly at the end of the report (clause 17). The analysis of the headline, global theme and macropropositions in *Alarab*'s report shows a different angle of the story from that presented in *Syria Times* and *Al-Manar*. The proposition that Syria is suspected of committing these crimes seems to be strongly implied in this report.

The fifth news report in this group is from the BBC, "Hariri 'killed by a suicide bomber'". The Theme and Rheme organization of this report is presented in Table 5.5.

| BBC | Theme | Rheme |
|------------|---|---|
| 1. | Hariri | 'killed by suicide bomber' |
| 2. | A UN inquiry into the murder of former Lebanese Prime minister Rafiq Hariri | has found new evidence that he was probably killed by a suicide bomber. |
| 3. | Its latest report | says investigators believe a man who died in the...blast is likely to have detonated a truck bomb which killed Mr Hariri. |
| 4. | The report | says new leads...have been uncovered, |
| 5. | but it | does not elaborate. |
| 6. | Syria | has denied involvement. |
| 7. | The report | was delivered to UN Secretary-General... by Serge Brammertz. |
| 8. | It | reinforces the earlier suggestions that Mr Hariri was assassinated by a large truck bomb. |
| 9. | Investigators | believe the man detonated about 1800 kg of explosives... |
| 10. | The document | says a tooth found at the scene and believed to belong to the bomber had a distinctive crown suggesting the attacker came from abroad, according to AP. |
| 11. | It | says investigators found 32 pieces of what are believed to be the bomber's remains, putting him between 20 and 25 years old. |
| 12. | A previous leader of the inquiry, Detlev Mehlis, | accused Syria of obstructing the investigation. |
| 13. | The latest report | says Syria's cooperation with the inquiry has been "generally satisfactory". |
| 14. | However, US ambassador to the UN John Bolton | said the latest report did not mean Syria was in the clear. |
| 15. | Mr Hariri's death | triggered huge demonstrations in Lebanon against the Syrians. |
| 16. | Damascus | denied involvement but eventually bowed to international pressure pulling out its troops after nearly 30 years of military presence. |
| 17. | The UN Security Council | is due to meet on Friday to discuss Mr Brammertz's latest findings. |

Table 5.5 Theme-Rheme Organization in the BBC English News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

The Theme-Rheme organization of the BBC English news report shows that the UN “latest report”, forms a continuous Theme in eight main clauses: 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 10 and 11 and 13. “Syria” also forms a continuous Theme in clauses 6 and 16. There is only one hyper Theme identified in Table 5.5, which is T9, “investigators”. “Detlev Mehliis” who is “a previous leader of the inquiry” into Hariri’s murder, T12, is a derived Theme from T9. The simple linear progression pattern is identified in R15 and T16. The rhematic elements of clause 15, “Syrians”, become the Theme of the next main clause, T16, “Damascus”. The thematic patterns in the BBC English are presented in the following figure:

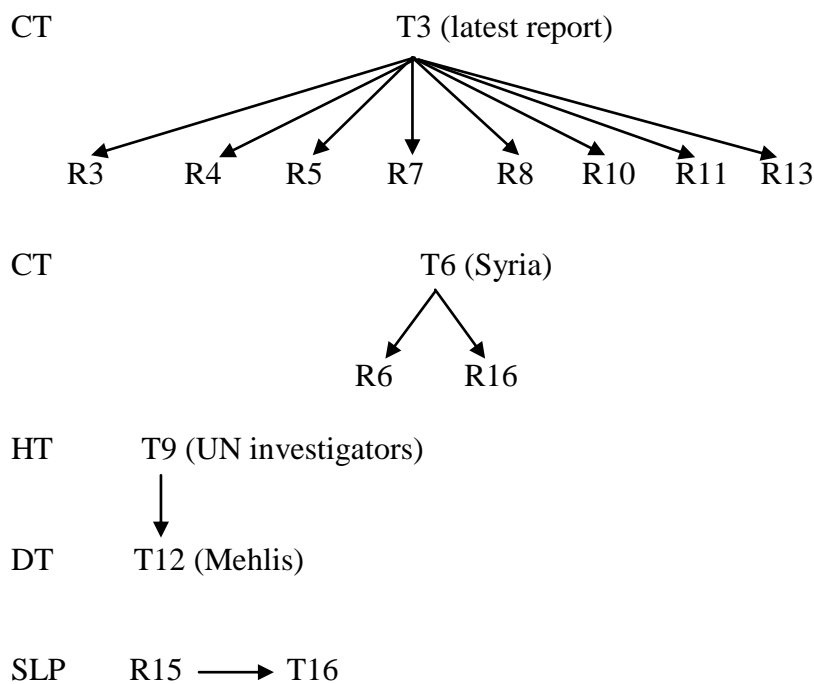


Figure 5.4 Thematic Patterns in the BBC English News Report on Hariri’s Murder
Probe

Figure 5.4 shows that the BBC English news report has two continuous Themes, a derived Theme and a simple linear progression patterns. The BBC report shows a tendency to thematize “the UN investigation report” in many main clauses as shown in the figure above. This dominant Theme, which is also the global topic of the BBC report, is reflected partially in the headline. Like the headline of Al-Jazeera’s report, the BBC headline focuses on part of the story, “Hariri killed by a suicide bomber”. The following macropropositions can be identified here: a suicide bomber killed Hariri, evidence on Hariri’s murder (the bombers’ tooth and remains), Syria’s denial of involvement, Syria obstructing the previous investigation, Syria’s cooperation with Brammertz’s team and the implication of Syria in Hariri’s murder. Syria’s lack of

cooperation is a macroproposition in two English reports, the BBC and *Alarab*. *Syria Times*, Al-Manar and Al-Jazeera English reports do not include this macroproposition. They focus instead on the satisfactory cooperation of Syria with the UN team. All of the previous reports, with the exception of *Syria Times*, focus on the “new evidence” of Brammertz’s investigation in the headlines. The evidence is elaborated on briefly in the BBC and Al-Jazeera’s reports.

The last English report is the CNN news report entitled “New leads in Hariri’s murder”. The report is presented in Table 5.6 and main clauses are organized into Theme and Rheme elements according to their sequences in the report.

| CNN | Theme | Rheme |
|-----|--|---|
| 1. | New leads | in Hariri probe |
| 2. | A “considerable number of new leads” | have emerged in the investigation into the assassination of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri, according to the latest report... |
| 3. | While the report does not detail the new leads, it | says they are related to the crime scene of the bomb blast that killed Hariri and 22 others... |
| 4. | The report | says investigative work is under way on the new leads. |
| 5. | The report also | says the investigative commission is “pursuing leads” on individuals “who knew something about the forthcoming attack” and ...”somehow tried to deliver a warning to Hariri...” |
| 6. | Evidence | has emerged, the report says, that Hariri, an outspoken critic of Syrian involvement in Lebanon, was himself aware of a “highlighted threat” against him... |
| 7. | The report | calls this “an important aspect of its work.” |
| 8. | Previous UN reports | have cited evidence that President Bashar al-Assad of Syria had personally threatened Hariri. |
| 9. | An earlier UN investigative report also | implicated Syrians, including Syria’s military intelligence chief and al-Assad’s brother-in-law. |
| 10. | Syria | has denied involvement in Hariri’s murder. |
| 11. | The United States | has suggested that the government of Syria is behind the Hariri murder as well as that of 14 others who were also outspoken against Syrian involvement in Lebanon. |
| 12. | While the latest report makes no direct assertion of Syrian involvement, US Ambassador John Bolton | told reporters Monday, “There is a principle theory that’s been advanced in prior reports about where the order for this assassination came from” that remains consistent with the latest report. |
| 13. | The latest report | says recent findings regarding the investigation into the 14 other cases have “strengthened its preliminary conclusion” that the cases are |

| | | |
|-----|--------|---|
| | | connected and that there is growing evidence that may link the cases. |
| 14. | Bolton | called the linking of the cases “quite significant”. |
| 15. | Syria | had been previously accused of obstructing the investigation but is described in the current report as “generally satisfactory” in its cooperation. |

Table 5.6 Theme-Rheme Organization in the CNN English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Table 5.6 shows that “new leads” are thematized in the first and second main clauses of the CNN English news report. In other words, “new leads” functions as a continuous Theme in clauses 1 and 2. The CNN report also thematizes “Syria”, in clauses 10 and 15, and the UN latest “report” in clauses 3, 4, 5, 7, 12 and 13. No hyper Themes are identified in Table 5.6. Simple linear progression patterns are identified in two instances. Part of the rhematic elements in the second main clause (R2) “according to the latest report”, becomes the Theme of the third main clause, “the report”. The Rheme of the ninth main clause (R9), “Syria”, becomes T10. The thematic patterns of the main clauses in the CNN English news report are presented in Figure 5.5 below:

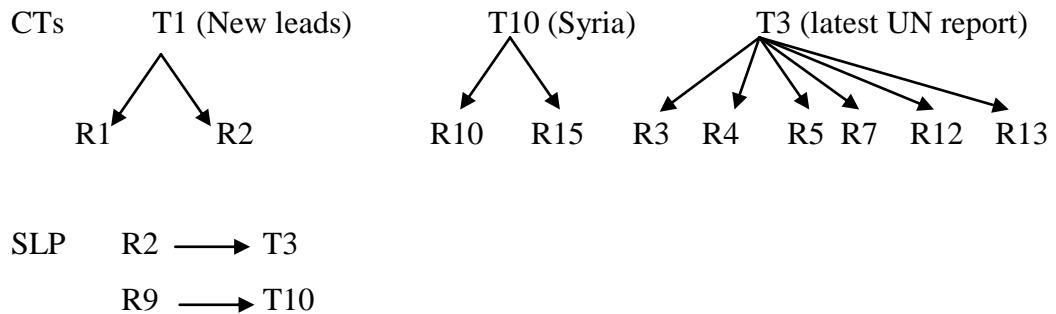


Figure 5.5 Thematic Patterns in the CNN English News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Figure 5.5 shows that the CNN English news report have three continuous Themes and two simple linear progression patterns. The CNN report shows a tendency to thematize “the latest UN report” investigating the murder of PM Rafiq Hariri and the “new leads” found at the crime scene where the assassination was carried out. “The UN latest report”, which is also the global topic, is reflected in the continuous thematic patterns identified in the CNN report. The news headline, however, focuses on the “new leads”, which occurs in Theme position and conveys New information. The following macropropositions are identified in this report: new leads in Hariri’s murder probe, Hariri killed by a bomb, Hariri was aware of a threat against him, the Syrian President threatened Hariri, The US implicated Syrian officials in Hariri’s murder, Syria is

implicated in other crimes, Syria obstructing pervious investigation and Syria’s cooperation with Brammertz is “generally satisfactory”. Macropropositions, which are not mentioned in the previous reports, are clearly expressed here, namely “evidence that President Bashar al-Assad of Syria had personally threatened Hariri” and “the government of Syria is behind the Hariri murder”. The CNN report clearly states Syria’s involvement in the Lebanese killings and thus expresses an ideological representation in this report.

The thematic pattern analysis in this group shows that the English news reports focus mainly on, one or all of, the following hyper or continuous Themes: “the UN latest report”, “the UN Investigation team” and “Brammertz, the UN Chief investigator into Hariri’s murder”. The results of the thematic pattern analysis of this group are presented Table 5.7.

| TP | Continuous | Derived | Simple Linear |
|--------------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| <i>Syria Times</i> | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Al-Manar | 2 | 2 | 2 |
| Al-Jazeera | 2 | 4 | 3 |
| <i>Alarab</i> | 3 | 0 | 1 |
| BBC | 2 | 1 | 1 |
| CNN | 3 | 0 | 2 |
| Totals | 12 | 7 | 9 |

Table 5.7 Thematic Patterns in the English News Reports on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Table 5.7 shows that the English news reports have twelve continuous Themes, seven derived Themes and nine simple linear progression patterns. The most frequent thematic pattern in this group is continuous Themes followed by simple linear progression. These results will be compared later with the rest of the data analysis in order to investigate dominant thematic patterns in the English and Arabic news reports.

The next section will present the equivalent Arabic reports from the same group and identify the thematic patterns, global themes and macropropositions in these reports.

5.1.1.2 The Analysis of the Arabic News Reports

Six Arabic news reports are analysed in terms of thematic patterns, global themes and macropropositions, *Teshreen*’s report “Brammertz confirms the assistance his

committee receives from Syria satisfactory”, Al-Manar’s “Brammertz considers Syria cooperation satisfactory and estimates the use of 1800 kg of explosives in operation”, Al-Jazeera’s “Syria receives Brammertz report positively”, Alarab’s “International investigator compliments Syria cooperation”, the BBC’s “a suicide bomber killed Hariri” and the CNN’s “Annan receives Brammertz new report about Hariri’s assassination”¹⁹⁰ (see appendix B). As in the previous section, the Arabic news reports are presented in tables. Main clauses are numbered according to their sequences and organized in terms of Theme and Rheme elements. The translations of the Arabic clauses are also provided in the same table and the order of the verb and Subject in Theme position in these translations is maintained. Syntactic and lexical elements such as *inna*, *kaana* and *qad* whose presence may affect the meaning of the clause and the presentation of information are presented in brackets (see section 4.5). Like the English news reports, the Arabic reports share a global theme, namely “Brammertz’s latest report on Hariri’s murder investigation”. The first Arabic news report is presented in Table 5.8.

| <i>Teshreen</i> | Theme | Rheme |
|-----------------|--|--|
| 1. | براميرتس Brammertz | سلم تقريره إلى عنان handed his report to Annan. |
| 2. | المساعدات السورية Syrian assistance | كانت مرضية was satisfactory. |
| 3. | سلم براميرتس رئيس لجنة التحقيق الدولية في اغتيال رئيس الوزراء اللبناني الأسبق رفيق الحريري Handed Brammertz, the international chief investigator into the assassination of former Lebanese PM Rafiq al-Hariri, | تقريره الخامس إلى كوفي عنان الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة صباح أمس his fifth report to UN Secretary-General, Kofi Annan, yesterday morning. |
| 4. | و ذكرت وكالة الأنباء And reported news agencies | أن براميرتس تناول في تقريره التحقيقات التي أجراها منذ تقريره السابق و التعاون الدولي مع لجنته... that Brammertz dealt in his report with the investigations conducted since his last report and the international cooperation with his commission. |
| 5. | كما ضمن تقريره Also included his report | ملاحظات ختامية تتعلق بالمساعدة التي تلقاها و الاجراءات التي استمرت اللجنة بمتابعتها بما في ذلك ما قامت به من تحليل و بحث يتعلق بعملية الاغتيال. endnotes regarding the assistance he received and the procedures followed by the commission to analyse and investigate the assassination. |

¹⁹⁰ The researcher’s translation of the Arabic news headlines

| | | |
|----|--|--|
| 6. | و أشارت الوكالات And agencies reported | إلى أن براميرتس اوضح في تقريره أن المساعدة التي تلقتها لجنته من سورية كانت مرضية و أن سورية استجابت لطلبات اللجنة ضمن الوقت الزمني المطلوب. that Brammertz made clear in his report that the assistance his commission received from Syria was satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated. |
| 7. | و كان الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة (Kaana) UN Secretary-General | قد عبر عن شكره لسورية لتعاونها مع اللجنة و ذلك خلال لقائه مع السيد وليد المعلم وزير الخارجية الذي التقى به صباح أمس expressed gratitude to Syria for its cooperation with the commission, during a meeting yesterday morning with Mr. Walid Moualem, the Foreign Minister. |

Table 5.8 Theme-Rheme Organization in *Teshreen* Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

The first and second main clauses in Table 5.8, in bold face, are the news headline. As was discussed in Chapter 4, Arabic Nominal clauses start with a Subject followed by a verb. Accordingly, a verb is considered part of the Rheme of a Nominal clause. In Verbal clauses, however, verbs come before the Subject and thus are considered, in this analysis, as part of the thematic elements of the clause. Being the news headline, clauses 1 and 2 in Table 5.8 are nominal in which the verbs, “handed” and “was”, are part of the Rhemes. Table 5.8 shows that “Brammertz” functions as a continuous Theme in the first and third main clauses of *Teshreen*'s report. “News agencies” also function as a continuous Theme in the fourth and sixth main clauses of *Teshreen*'s report. Rheme elements in the third main clause (R3), “Kofi Annan”, become the Theme of the seventh main clause (T3), “the UN Secretary-General”. Rhematic elements of the fourth main clause (R4), “his report”, become the Theme of the fifth main clause (T5), “also included his report”. No derived Themes are identified in Table 5.8. The thematic patterns identified in *Teshreen*'s Arabic news report are presented in Figure 5.6 below:

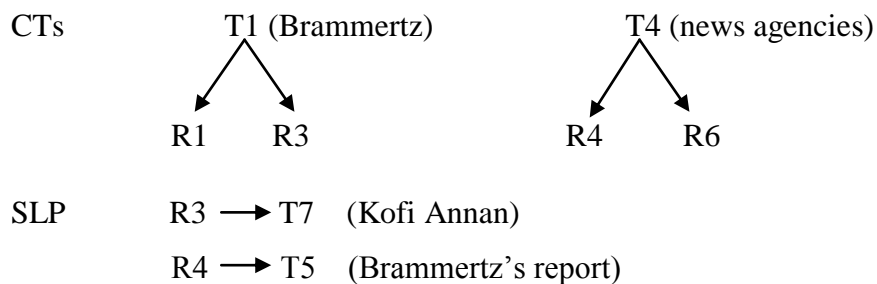


Figure 5.6 Thematic Patterns in *Teshreen* Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Figure 5.6 shows that two thematic patterns are identified in *Teshreen's* report: two continuous Themes and two simple linear progression patterns. The global topic, “Brammertz’s report”, is expressed in the headline of the *Teshreen* report. The following macropropositions are identified here: the international cooperation with Brammertz’s investigation, Syria’s cooperation with the investigation team and the UN gratitude to Syria. The cooperation of Syria is described as “satisfactory” and focused upon not only in *Teshreen's* report but also in its headline. “Syria’s assistance” is presented as New information in Theme position in clause 2 (see Table 5.8). The macropropositions, global topic and headline construct a certain social reality, namely Syria is innocent and wrongly accused of Hariri’s murder. This report seeks to influence the readers to adopt the political views and propositions presented in its discourse. The analysis indicates an ideological representation of Syria and a positive picture of its cooperation with the UN team.

The second Arabic news report which deals with the investigation of Hariri’s murder is from Al-Manar news media. Table 5.9 presents the Al-Manar Arabic report and the translations into English.

| Al-Manar | Theme | Rheme |
|----------|--|---|
| 1. | براميرتز Brammertz | يعتبر تعاون سوريا مرض ويرجح استخدام 1800 كلغ من المتفجرات في العملية considers Syria cooperation satisfactory and estimates the use of 1800 kg of explosives in operation. |
| 2. | رجح القاضي البلجيكي سيرج براميرتز رئيس لجنة التحقيق الدولية في قضية اغتيال الحريري Estimated the Belgian Prosecutor Serge Brammertz, head of the International Investigation Commission into the assassination of Hariri, | في تقريره الجديد أن تكون كمية المتفجرات المستخدمة في موكب الرئيس الحريري 1800 كغ. in his new report, that 1800 kg of explosives were used in bombing Hariri’s convoy. |
| 3. | كما رجح As well as, estimated | فرضية حصول انفجار واحد ... the theory of one explosion... |
| 4. | و لفت التقرير And mentioned the report | إلى أنه تم العثور على أحد أسنان في مسرح الجريمة تعود إلى شخص ذكر عثر سابقاً على أجزاء منه. that was found a tooth at the scene which belongs to a male person, some of his remains were found earlier. |
| 5. | وتظهر السن And shows the tooth | علامة مميزة نادراً ما تشاهد عند الأشخاص اللبنانيين a distinguishing mark which is rarely seen on Lebanese. |

| | | |
|-----|--|---|
| 6. | و أشار التقرير And pointed the report | إلى أن الرجل قد يكون في أوائل العشرينات من عمره و يستبعد أن يكون تجاوز الخامسة و العشرين. that the man may be in his early twenties and not have reached 25. |
| 7. | و رجح التقرير And estimated the report | أن سيارة الميتسوبيشي التي كانت تحمل قنبلة كبيرة جداً رنتها على الأقل 1200 كغ من مادة (التي أن تي) و انها قد تكون فجرت من قبل الرجل الذي تعود إليه الجزاء البشرية that a Mitsubishi car, which carried a huge bomb weighing at least 1200 kg of TNT, may have been detonated by a man, whom the remains belong to. |
| 8. | و قد تم تفحص And has been examined | فرضية جديدة تتعلق بوسائل اتصال جوي كطريقة للتسبب بالانفجار a new theory of using air communications to detonate the bomb. |
| 9. | و جرى تقديمها And it was presented | إلى اللجنة مؤخراً للتحقق من سلامتها to the commission later to examine its validity. |
| 10. | و بحسب تقرير براميرتس فإن اللجنة الدولية According to Brammertz's report, | تعيد تقويم حياة الرئيس الحريري في المرحلة التي أدت إلى اغتياله من زوايا متعددة... the International Commission is evaluating President Hariri's life from various angles. |
| 11. | و تبني تقرير براميرتس And adopted Brammertz's report | احتمال أن يكون هناك أكثر من دافع واحد لاقتراف الجريمة أخذاً بعين الاعتبار المناخ السياسي الذي أحاط بالحريري وقت و قبيل اغتياله... the possibility that there is more than one motive to commit the crime, taking into account the political environment surrounding Hariri's life during and before his assassination. |
| 12. | و أكد التقرير And affirmed the report | أن اللجنة تواصل القيام باختيار دقيق لكل السمات المتعلقة بتورط أحمد أبو عدس في الجريمة... that the commission continues to examine carefully all the details concerning the involvement of Ahmad Abu Adas in the crime. |
| 13. | و أشار التقرير And pointed the report | إلى أن اللجنة تتابع اجراء سلسلة من المقابلات و إعادة المقابلات مع ممثلين و ممثلين سابقين عن الأجهزة الحكومية في سورية و لبنان. that the commission continues to conduct a series of interviews and re-interviews with current and former Syrian and Lebanese officials. |
| 14. | هذا العمل This work | يبقى قائماً خلال الفترة المقبلة و يبقى مفتاح أساسياً لفهم التركيبة السياسية .. في لبنان في وقت الهجوم. will still be conducted in the future and is still a key issue in understanding the Lebanese political infrastructure... during the attack. |

| | | |
|-----|---|--|
| 15. | و أوضح التقرير And made clear the report | إن اللجنة أجرت عدداً من المهام في سوريا حيث أجرت إحدى عشر مقابلة، ضمنها تلك مع مسؤولين حكوميين سورياً. that the commission accomplished a number of missions including 11 interviews with Syrian officials. |
| 16. | و وصف التقرير And described the report | مستوى التعاون الذي أمنته سوريا من خلال فترة اعداد التقرير بالمرضي حيث أن سوريا ردت على مطالب اللجنة خلال الوقت المحدد. Syria's cooperation, during the process of preparing the report, as satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated. |

Table 5.9 Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Manar Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

The analysis of Al-Manar Arabic-language report shows that “Brammertz”, which functions as the Theme in the news headline, forms a continuous Theme in clauses 1, 2 and 3. Brammertz’s “new report” functions as a continuous Theme in nine main clauses, clauses 4, 6, 7, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15 and 16. “The report” forms a simple linear TP, where R2, “in his new report”, becomes T4, “and mentioned the report”. The Rheme of the fourth main clause, “found a tooth”, becomes the Theme of the fifth main clause, “and shows the tooth”. The Rheme of the eighth main clause (R8), “a new theory of using air communications to detonate the bomb”, becomes the Theme of the following main clause (T9), “and was presented”. R13, “that the commission continues to conduct a series of interviews and re-interviews with current and former Syrian and Lebanese officials”, becomes T14, “this work”. The thematic patterns identified in the above Table of Al-Manar Arabic report are presented in Figure 5.7.

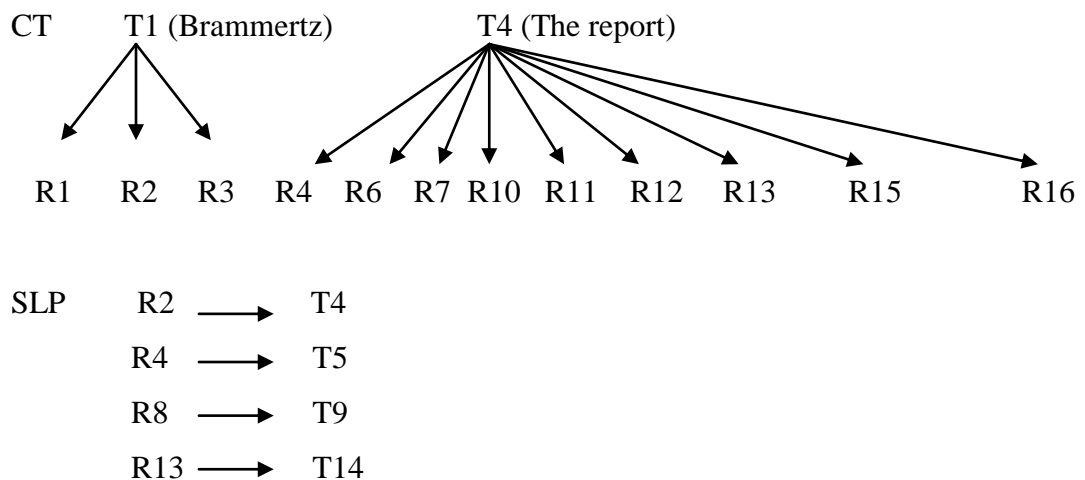


Figure 5.7 Thematic Patterns in Al-Manar Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Figure 5.7 shows that Al-Manar Arabic news report has two continuous Themes and four simple linear progression patterns. No derived Themes are identified in this report. Analysing the thematic patterns also shows a tendency in Al-Manar Arabic report to focus attention on Brammertz and his new “report” to the UN Council. The “report” forms a dominant Theme in nine main Arabic clauses, as shown in figure 5.7. The global topic, “Brammertz’s report”, is reflected in the continuous thematic patterns, which are identified in the Al-Manar report (Figure 5.7). The macropropositions in this report are: Hariri killed by explosives, evidence on Hariri’s murder (the bomber’s tooth and air communication), investigating Syrian officials and Syria’s cooperation is satisfactory. Although Syria’s cooperation is mentioned once and last in the report (clause 16), Al-Manar presents this in the headline. Like *Teshreen*, the macrostructures of the Al-Manar discourse construct a social reality, which favours a positive presentation of Syria.

The third Arabic news report is from Al-Jazeera. The news headline is “Syria receives Brammertz report positively”. The report is presented in Table 5.10 below:

| Al-Jazeera | Theme | Rheme |
|------------|--|---|
| 1. | سوريا Syria | تصف تقرير براميرتس بالإيجابي receives Brammertz report positively |
| 2. | وصفت سوريا Described Syria | تقرير المحقق الدولي سيرج براميرتس في قضية اغتيال رئيس الوزراء اللبناني الأسبق رفيق الحريري بأنه إيجابي the report by Serge Brammertz, the international investigator into the assassination of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri, as positive. |
| 3. | و نقلت صحيفة الثورة الرسمية And reported <i>al-Thawra</i> newspaper | عن فيصل مقداد...قوله أن التقرير إيجابي on behalf of Faysal Miqdad...that the report is positive. |
| 4. | من ناحية ثانية شكر الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة On the other hand, thanked UN Secretary- General | دمشق على تعاونها مع اللجنة... Damascus for its cooperation with the commission... |
| 5. | و اعتبر التقرير Considered the report | أن تعاون الحكومة السورية مع التحقيق كان "مرضياً" بصورة عامة... the Syrian government’s cooperation with the investigation as generally “satisfactory”. |
| 6. | ولكن السفير الأميركي لدى مجلس الأمن جون بولتون However, the US ambassador to the Security Council, John Bolton, | قلل من أهمية الإشارة الواردة بالتقرير عن التعاون السوري مع التحقيقات. understates the Syrian cooperation. |

| | | |
|-----|--|---|
| 7. | وسلم المحقق الدولي Handed the international investigator | إلى الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة كوفي عنان تقريره أمس الاثنين to UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan his report on Monday. |
| 8. | و أظهرت المعلومات الأولية الواردة في التقرير And showed the initial information mentioned in the report | أن التفجير الذي استهدف الحريري نفذ على الأرجح باستخدام 1800 كغ من المتفجرات بدلاً من 1200 كما كان يعتقد that the blast which targeted Hariri used probably 1800 kg of explosives and not 1200 kg as was believed before. |
| 9. | ورجحت And estimated-it | أن يكون منفذه قضي بالانفجار that the attacker died in the blast. |
| 10. | و يقول التقرير And says the report | إن التحقيقات تعزز اقتناعاً بوجود رابط بين 14 هجوماً ارتكبت بلبنان... منها العملية التي أدت إلى اغتيال الحريري... that the investigations support the belief that there is a link between the 4 attacks in Lebanon ...including the operation that caused Hariri's assassination. |
| 11. | وقالت مراسلة الجزيرة في بيروت Said Al-Jazeera reporter in Beirut | إن التقرير توصل لبعض النتائج الأساسية حول تفاصيل عملية اغتيال والأسباب التي تقف وراءها... that the report found some basic results about the details of the assassination and the motives behind it. |
| 12. | لكنها But she | رجحت أن يسهم في تخفيف حدة الاحتقان بين الكتل السياسية في لبنان estimated that this will reduce the tension between Lebanese political parties. |
| 13. | ويتضمن التقرير Consists the report, | ، الذي تسلم رئيس الوزراء اللبناني نسخة منه مساء الاثنين، 105 فقرات في 22 صفحة... a copy of which was submitted to the Lebanese Prime Minister on Monday evening, 105 paragraphs in 22 pages... |
| 14. | ويشمل And includes-it | الفترة الواقعة بين 15 يونيو/حزيران و 15 سبتمبر/أيلول 2006 the period between 15 June and 15 September 2006. |
| 15. | ومن المنتظر It is expected | أن يجري مجلس الأمن مشاورات حوله يوم الجمعة المقبل. that the Security Council will hold discussions about it on Friday. |

Table 5.10 Theme-Rheme Organization in Al-Jazeera Arabic News Report on Hariri's

Murder Probe

The above table shows three thematic patterns, continuous Themes, a derived Theme and simple linear progression. "Syria", which is the Theme of the news headline, occurs in Theme positions of clauses 1 and 2. Brammertz's "report" occurs in Theme positions of clauses 5, 8, 9, 10, 13 and 14. "Al-Jazeera reporter" is a continuous Theme in clauses 11 and 12. "The report" in Rheme position of clause 3 functions as a simple

linear TP where it becomes the Theme of fifth main clause. The thematic patterns identified in Al-Jazeera’s report are presented in figure 5.9.

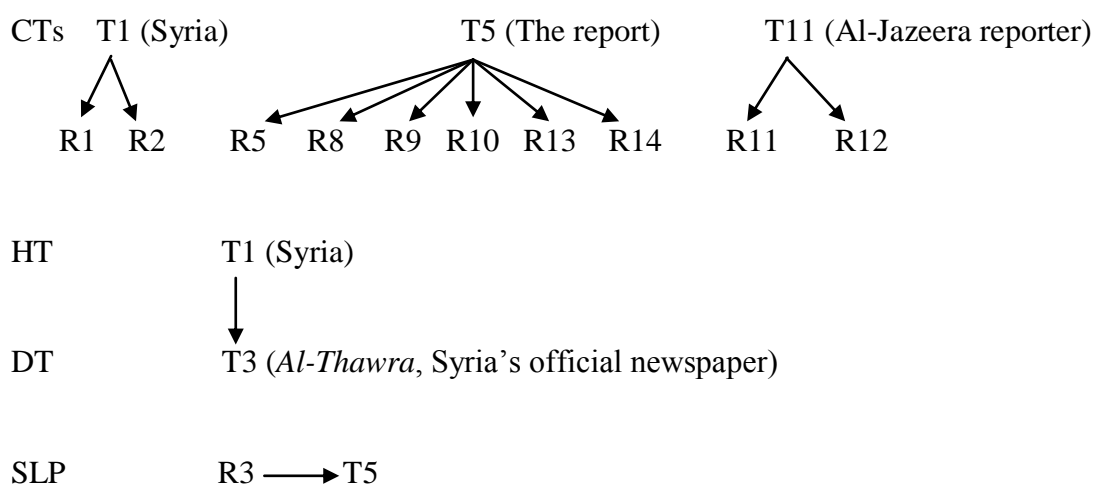


Figure 5.8 Thematic Patterns in Al-Jazeera Arabic News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

Figure 5.8 shows that Al-Jazeera Arabic news report has three continuous Themes, one derived and one simple linear progression. The most dominant pattern is the continuous Theme represented by Brammertz’s latest “report”, which occurs in Theme position of six main clauses in the report. The global theme in the Al-Jazeera Arabic report is reflected in the dominant thematic pattern identified in Figure 5.8. However, the Al-Jazeera headline focuses on a specific side of the story, namely “Syria receives Brammertz report positively”. The macropropositions in this report focus on the following topics: Syria’s reception of Brammertz report, UN gratitude to Syria, Syria’s cooperation and details of Brammertz’s report. Syria’s reluctance to cooperate with the previous UN investigation and its implication in Hariri’s murder are not macropropositions in this report. The news discourse here constructs a positive picture of Syria and its role in the investigation. The analysis reveals that the Al-Jazeera Arabic-language report presents a different interpretation of Syria’s role from that in its English-language version (section 5.1.1.1).

The following Arabic report is from Alarab news media and is presented in Table 5.11.

| <i>Alarab</i> | Theme | Rheme |
|---------------|--|--|
| 1. | المحقق الدولي International investigator | يثني على تعاون سوريا compliments Syria cooperation |
| 2. | براميرتس Brammertz | يربط بين اغتيال الحريري و 14 عملية قتل أخرى links Hariri’s assassination and 14 other killings |

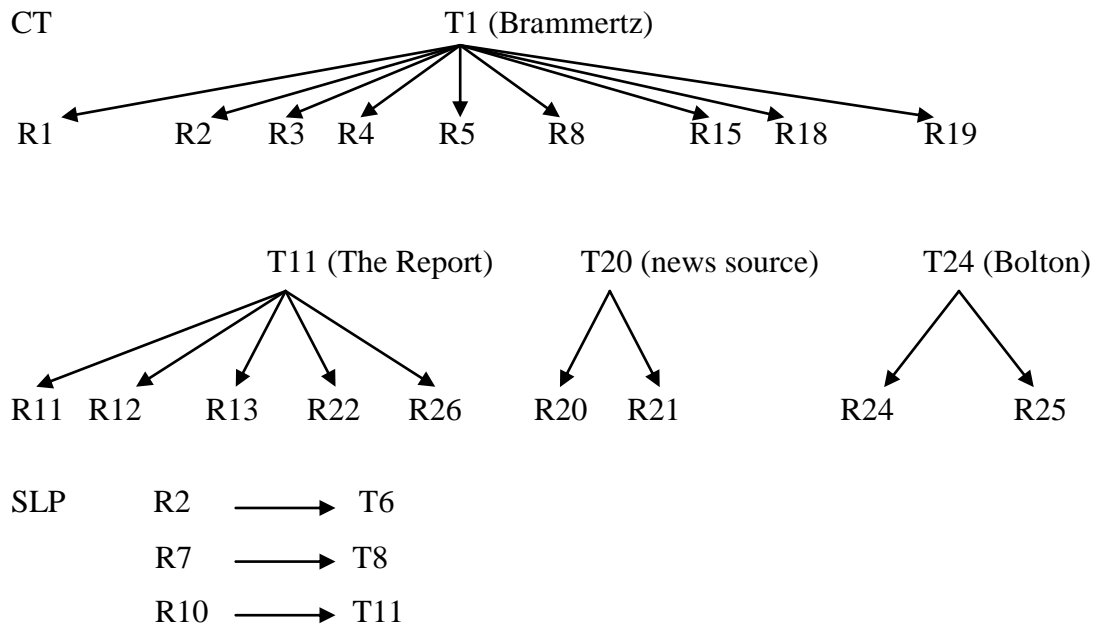
| | | |
|-----|---|---|
| 3. | قال المحقق البارز...براميرتس Said the prominent investigator... Brammertz | الاثنين أن هناك صلات بين مقتل رئيس الوزراء اللبناني السابق رفيق الحريري و 14 عملية اغتيال سياسية في لبنان on Monday that there are links between the killing of former Lebanese PM Rafiq Hariri and 14 other politically-motivated assassinations in Lebanon. |
| 4. | وقال المدعي البلجيكي براميرتس Said the Belgian prosecutor Brammertz | في تقرير مقدم إلى مجلس الأمن الدولي "إن عمل اللجنة في 14 قضية أخرى ساعد على وضع الهجمات في الإطار السائد في ذلك الوقت و بدأت في إيجاد روابط بشكل ملحوظ في التعرف على الدوافع المحتملة" in a report to the International Security Council "the work of the commission in 14 other cases helped putting the attacks within a particular framework of that time and I started to find observable connections which identify the possible motives. |
| 5. | و قال And said | في أول إشارة إلى أن التحقيق الذي استغرق شهوراً قد يقترب من تحويل القضية إلى المحكمة "إن التحقق من عمق و عرض و طبيعة تلك الروابط بمعيار برهاني يمثل أولوية في التحقيق على مدى الشهور المقبلة". in an initial reference to the investigations, which took months and are close to be presented in a court "investigating the depth, width and nature of these connections by applying an evidential standard is a priority of the investigations in the coming months. |
| 6. | و كان الحريري و 22 آخرون (Kaana) Hariri and 22 others | قتلوا في انفجار ضخم في بيروت... killed in a huge Bomb in Beirut. |
| 7. | و أدينت And was accused Syria | سوريا بمسئوليتها عن القتل... of being responsible for the killing... |
| 8. | و قال براميرتس And said Brammertz | إن فريق المحققين العاملين معه سوف يطور "تفهم الصلة بالنسبة لمرتكبي الحوادث على كافة المستويات في تحقيق اغتيال الحريري. that his investigation commission will develop "an understanding of the connections between those who participated at all levels in the perpetration of this crime. |
| 9. | و رفضت الحكومة السورية And denied the Syrian government | الاتهامات بأنها أمرت باغتيال الحريري the accusations that it ordered the assassination of Hariri. |
| 10. | و لكن المسؤولين السوريين But the Syrian officials | تعاونوا مع تحقيق الأمم المتحدة.. cooperated with the UN investigation. |
| 11. | و أرسلت نسخة من التحقيق Was delivered a copy of the investigation, | الذي أرسل إلى كوفي عنان إلى المدعي العام اللبناني سعيد ميرزا... which was handed to Kofi Annan, to the Lebanese prosecutor Said Merza. |
| 12. | و تسربت بعض من محتويات التقرير And were leaked some contents of the report | إلى الصحف قبل أن يعلن في مقر الأمم المتحدة بعد أن تسلمه أعضاء المجلس. to newspapers before it was made public by members of the Council. |
| 13. | و يحلل التقرير And analyses the report | البيئة السياسية قبل اغتيال الحريري... the political environment before Hariri's |

| | | |
|-----|---|--|
| | | assassination. |
| 14. | و على عكس سلفه المدعي الألماني ديتلف ميليس Contrary to his German predecessor, Detlev Mehlis, | قدم براميرتس تفاصيل قليلة عن تحقيقه submitted Brammertz little details of his investigation. |
| 15. | و لكنه But he | أبلغ بشكل مهني المجلس عن أنشطة لجنته الماضية و المستقبلية officially informed the Council of past and future activities of his commission. |
| 16. | و تتسق بعض الأدلة الجديدة Cohere some new leads | مع أن المفجر الانتحاري قاد شاحنة محملة بمخدرات يبلغ وزنها 1800 كغ من المتفجرات التي قتلت الحريري طبقاً لمسؤولين لبنانيين... with that the suicide bomber drove a truck packed with a charge equivalent to 1800 kg of explosives that killed Hariri, according to Lebanese officials. |
| 17. | و قالوا And said-they | إن تقرير براميرتس يشير إلى أن المحققين ربما تعرفوا على بقايا جثمان في موقع القنبلة قد يكون هو للشخص الذي كان يقود الشاحنة و فجر القنبلة الضخمة بها. Brammertz's report mentioned that investigators may have identified the remains of the person who drove the truck and detonated the huge bomb in it. |
| 18. | و صف سيرج براميرتس رئيس لجنة التحقيق في اغتيال الحريري Described Serge Brammertz, the chief investigator into Hariri's assassination, | تعاون سوريا في التحقيق بأنه "مرضياً". Syria's cooperation as "satisfactory". |
| 19. | و أضاف And adds-he | أن براميرتس ذكر في تقريره أن تعاون سوريا مع المحققين ...كان مرضياً بشكل عام". in his report that Syria's cooperation with the investigators was "satisfactory in general." |
| 20. | و قال المصدر... And said the source... | أن براميرتس أصر في تقريره على أنه سيطلب من السلطات السورية تقديم "التعاون الكامل". that Brammertz insisted in his report that he will request "complete cooperation" from the Syrian authorities. |
| 21. | و أفاد المصدر And added the source | بأن التقرير أشار إلى أن محققي الأمم المتحدة أجروا 11 مقابلة مع داخل سوريا... that the report mentioned that UN investigators conducted 11 interviews in Syria. |
| 22. | و ذكر التقرير And mentioned the report | أن جميع المقابلات التي تمت داخل سوريا كانت بعلم السلطات السورية that the interviews in Syria were conducted in the presence of the Syrian authorities. |
| 23. | و في نيويورك In New York, | أشاد السفير الأمريكي في الأمم المتحدة جون بولتون بالقاضي براميرتس...قائلاً أن الصلة بالأربع عشر حالة وفاة الأخرى "هامية للغاية". the US ambassador to the UN, John Bolton, compliments the judge Brammertz...saying that the connection between the 14 other death cases were "very important". |

| | | |
|-----|---------------------------------------|--|
| 24. | و قال بولتون And said Bolton | إن براميرتس بدا مستعداً لتحويل القضايا أمام المحكمة.. that Brammertz seemed ready to take these cases to court. |
| 25. | و أشار بولتون And pointed Bolton | إلى أن نتائج براميرتس لا تتعارض مع التحقيق السابق الذي تولاه ميليس. that Brammertz's findings do not contradict with the previous investigation headed by Mehlis. |
| 26. | و يقول التقرير And said the report | إن محققي الأمم المتحدة أجروا 11 مقابلة داخل سوريا... that UN investigators conducted 11 interviews on Syrian territories. |

Table 5.11 Theme-Rheme Organization in *Alarab* Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Table 5.11 shows that “Brammertz”, the “international investigator into Hariri’s murder” occurs in Theme positions of clauses 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 8, 15, 18 and 19. “The report”, in which Brammertz presents the latest findings of the investigation, occurs in Theme positions of clauses 11, 12, 13, 22 and 26. The “source” in *Alarab* newspaper news occurs in Theme positions of clauses 20 and 21. “Bolton”, the US Ambassador to UN, occurs twice in Theme positions of clauses 24 and 25. No derived Themes are identified in Table 5.11. Simple linear thematic patterns are identified. R3, “the killing of former Lebanese PM, Rafiq Hariri”, becomes T6, “were Hariri and 22 others”. R7, “Syria of being responsible for the killing”, becomes T9, “Denied the Syrian government”. R10, “cooperated with the UN investigation”, becomes T11 “was delivered a copy of the investigation”. R14, “submitted Brammertz...” becomes T15, “But he”. R16, “according to Lebanese officials”, becomes T17, “and said-they”. The thematic patterns in *Alarab* news report are presented in the figure below:



R14 → T15

R16 → T17

Figure 5.9 Thematic Patterns in *Alarab* Arabic News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

The *Alarab* news report has four continuous Themes, no derived Themes and five simple linear progression patterns, as shown in Figure 5.9. “Brammertz”, which is thematized in 9 main clauses, and his “report”, which is thematized in 5 main clauses, form a dominant Theme in the *Alarab* Arabic report. The global topic, “Brammertz’s latest report”, is conveyed by the dominant thematic patterns in the *Alarab* report. The following macropropositions are identified here: details and evidence in Brammertz’s report on Hariri’s murder, Syria’s denial of involvement in Hariri’s murder, Syria’s satisfactory cooperation with the investigation and the UN interviewing Syrians. The cooperation of Syria, which is a macroproposition, is complimented by the international investigators in the *Alarab* headline. There is no clear statement of Syria’s lack of cooperation or the accusation against it of killing Hariri. The analysis of the headline, global theme and macropropositions in the *Alarab* Arabic-language report reveals a different construction of meanings and reality regarding the way Syria is presented from that in its English version (section 5.1.1.1). The analysis indicates different ideological representations in these reports.

The next Arabic report is from the BBC Arabic. It is entitled “a suicide bomber killed Hariri”. The report is presented in Table 5.12 below:

| BBC Arabic | Theme | Rheme |
|------------|--|---|
| 1. | انتحاري A Suicide bomber | قتل الحريري killed Hariri |
| 2. | توصل تحقيق الأمم المتحدة في اغتيال رئيس الوزراء السابق رفيق الحريري Achieved UN investigation into the assassination of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri | إلى أدلة جديدة تشير أن انتحارياً ربما نفذ عملية الاغتيال. new evidence that a suicide bomber probably carried out the assassination. |
| 3. | وجاء في آخر تقرير أصدره المحققون And came in the latest report presented by the investigators | أنهم يعتقدون أن رجلاً قتل في العملية كان المسؤول عن تفجير الشاحنة المفخخة التي قتلت الحريري that they believe a man, who was killed in the operation, was responsible for detonating a truck bomb that killed Hariri. |
| 4. | وكان الحريري And (kaana) al-Hariri | قد لقي مصرعه في تفجير هائل في بيروت (qad) killed in Beirut huge blast |

| | | |
|-----|--|---|
| 5. | اتهم انصاره Accused his supporters | سوريا بالمسؤولية عنها Syria of being responsible for that. |
| 6. | ولم يقدم التقرير الذي رفعه رئيس التحقيق الدولي ، سيرج براميرتس، Did not refer the report, which was delivered by the international chief investigator, Serge Brammertz, | أي إشارة إلى الجهة التي أصدرت الأمر باغتيال الحريري. to the party which gave orders of assassinating Hariri. |
| 7. | وكان ديتلف ميليس، الذي رأس التحقيق قبل براميرتس، And (kaana) Detlev Mehlis, who head of the investigation before Brammertz, | قد اتهم سورية بعرقلة التحقيق. (qad) accused Syria of obstructing the investigation. |
| 8. | وقال براميرتس And said Brammertz | إن التعاون من الجانب السوري كان مرضياً بشكل عام. that Syria's cooperation was satisfactory in general. |
| 9. | غير أن السفير الأميركي لدى الأمم المتحدة، جون بولتون، However, US ambassador to the UN, John Bolton, | قال أن التقرير الأخير لا يعني تبرئة سورية said that the last report did not mean that Syria was in the clear. |
| 10. | وقد رفع التقرير Has been handed the report | إلى مجلس الأمن الدولي و الذي سوف يبحثه الجمعة to the International Security Council and will be discussed on Friday. |
| 11. | و يعتقد المحققون And believe the investigators | أن من قام بعملية التفجير قام بذلك من داخل أو من جانب الشاحنة التي كانت تحوي 1800 كغ من المتفجرات that whoever carried out the bombing was inside or near the truck which carried 1800 kg of explosives |
| 12. | و يقول تقرير المحققين And says the report | أنه عثر على ضرس في مكان الانفجار... that a tooth was found at the scene... |
| 13. | و تشير الرقعة على الضرس Shows the mark on the tooth | إلى أن المفجر وصل من خارج البلاد، حسب ما أفادت به وكالة اسوشيتد برس للأنباء that the bomber came from abroad, according to Associated Press news agency. |
| 14. | ويضيف التقرير And adds the report | أن المحققين عثروا على 32 قطعة يعتقد أنها من أشلاء المفجر that investigators found 32 pieces of what are believed to be the bomber's remains. |
| 15. | و خمن المحققون على اساسها Believe investigators, accordingly, | أنه بين الخامسة و العشرين و الثلاثين من العمر. that he is between 24 and 30 years old. |

Table 5.12 Theme-Rheme Organization in the BBC Arabic News Report on Hariri's

Murder Probe

The analysis of the BBC report shows that “latest report” functions as a continuous Theme in clauses 3, 6, 10 and 14. The UN “investigators” also function as a continuous Theme in clauses 11 and 15. The Theme of the second main clause, “UN investigation into the assassination of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri”, functions as a hyper Theme from which T3, T6, T7, T8 and T11 are derived. T3 is “the latest report” of the UN investigation into the assassination of Hariri. T7 is “Detlev Mehlis, who head the investigation before Brammertz”. T8 is “Brammertz” who is the current International Chief Investigator into the murder of Hariri. T11 is the “UN investigators” into the assassination of Hariri. T4, “Hariri’s supporters”, is derived from T3, “Hariri”. Simple linear progression patterns are identified in the BBC report. Part of the rhematic elements in the third main clause, “that killed Hariri”, becomes the Theme of the fourth main clause, “Hariri”. Part of the rhematic elements of the twelfth main clause (R12), “a tooth was found in the scene”, becomes the Theme of clause 13 (T13), “shows the mark on the tooth”. R14, “investigators found 32 pieces of what are believed to be the bomber’s remains”, becomes T15, “investigators believe”. The thematic patterns which are identified in the BBC Arabic news report above are presented in the following figure:

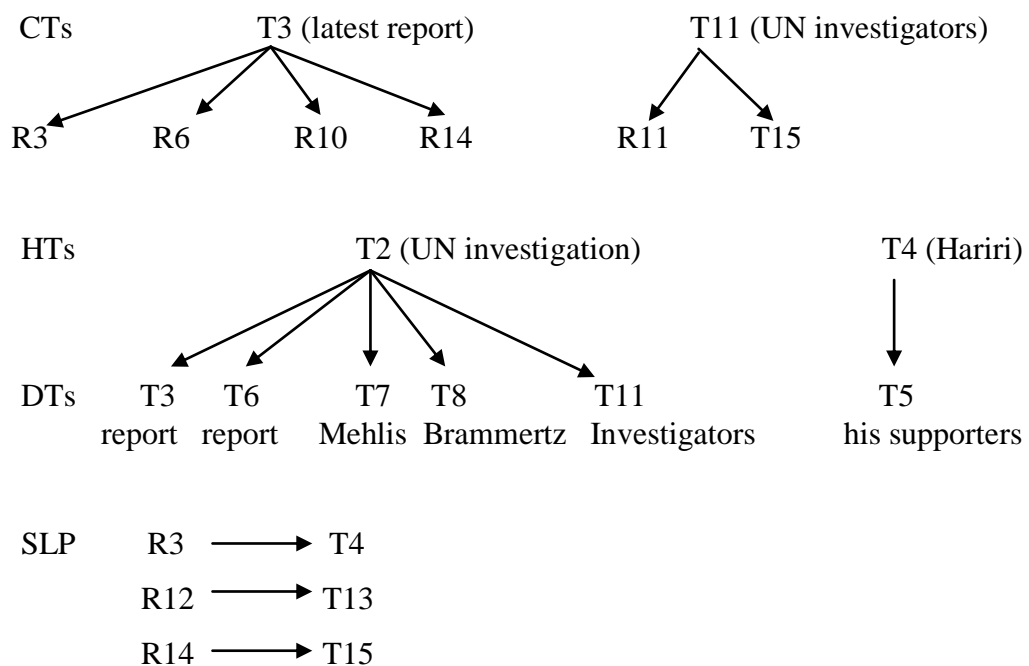


Figure 5.10 Thematic Patterns in the BBC Arabic on Hariri’s Murder Probe.

Figure 5.10 shows that the BBC Arabic news report on Hariri’s murder investigation have two continuous Themes, five derived Themes and three simple linear progression patterns. The UN investigation and its latest report are two dominant Themes in the BBC Arabic news report. The global topic of this news discourse, “Brammertz’s latest

report”, is conveyed by the dominant thematic patterns identified in Figure 5.10. The BBC Arabic report has the following macropropositions: Hariri killed by a suicide bomber, Syria accused of Hariri’s murder, Syria’s lack of cooperation with previous UN investigations, Syria cooperates with Brammertz, Syria’s implicated in these assassinations and evidence in Brammertz’s report which may implicate Syria. Unlike the previous Arabic-language headlines in this group, the BBC headline here does not focus on Syria’s cooperation with the UN. It presents the “suicide bomber” as the most important information in Theme position in its headline. The macrostructures in the Arabic and English news reports from the BBC online media reveal similar social and political views towards Syria, which do not encourage its representation as innocent – a representation which is different from the one expressed in the previous Arabic-language reports.

The last report in this group is the CNN Arabic report entitled “Annan receives Brammertz’s new report about Hariri’s assassination”. Table 5.13 presents the Theme-Rheme organization of main clauses in this report.

| CNN | Theme | Rheme |
|-----|---|--|
| 1. | عنان Annan | يتسلم تقريراً جديداً من براميرتس حول اغتيال الحريري receives Brammertz new report about Hariri’s assassination. |
| 2. | تسلم الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة كوفي عنان Received UN Secretary- General Kofi Annan | الاثنين قريراً جديداً من رئيس اللجنة الدولية للتحقيق في اغتيال رئيس الوزراء اللبناني الأسبق رفيق الحريري، حيث من المقرر أن يبدأ مجلس الأمن مشاوراته حول هذا التقرير الجمعة on Monday a new report from the international chief investigator about the assassination of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri. |
| 3. | و أكد مسؤولون في المكتب الإعلامي Confirmed officials in the informational office | للأمين العام للمنظمة الدولية أن سيرج براميرتس، رئيس لجنة التحقيق الدولية في اغتيال الحريري، سلم تقريره إلى عنان to UN Secretary-General that Serge Brammertz, the international chief investigator into Hariri’s assassination, delivered his report to Annan. |
| 4. | ولكنه But he | لم يعلن موعداً محدداً لنشر التقرير did not announce a definite date for publishing the report |
| 5. | وكان التقرير الأخير للجنة التحقيق... (Kaana) the last report of the investigative commission... | قد أشار إلى إحراز تقدم مهم في ملابسات اغتيال رئيس الوزراء اللبناني الأسبق (qad) referred to a significant progress in the investigation into Hariri’s assassination. |
| 6. | كما ألمح براميرتس And hinted Brammertz, | في هذا التقرير إلى تعاون سوريا مع أعضاء لجنة التحقيق in this report, to Syria’s cooperation with the investigations. |

| | | |
|-----|---|---|
| 7. | ولم يذكر التقرير صراحة And did not mention the report explicitly | ما إذا كان لدمشق أي دور في اغتيال رئيس الوزراء الراحل if Damascus has any role in assassinating former Lebanese Prime Minister. |
| 8. | فيما أشار جانب كبير من الرأي العام اللبناني Meanwhile, pointed a large number of Lebanese public opinion | إلى أجهزة الاستخبارات السورية بأصابع الاتهام باعتبارها متورطة في الاعتداء to Syrian intelligence agency with accusing fingers as an accomplice in the attack. |
| 9. | و أكد براميرتس Affirmed Brammertz | أمام مجلس الأمن وجود رابط محتمل بين عملية اغتيال رئيس الوزراء رفيق الحريري و 14 اعتداء آخرين ارتكبت في لبنان واستهدف أو ساطاً مناهضة لسوريا to the Security Council that there is a possible link between the assassination of PM Rafiq Hariri and 14 other attacks in Lebanon targeting anti-Syrians. |
| 10. | و في 15 حزيران/يونيو الماضي On June 15 th last year | قرر مجلس الأمن الدولي تمديد فترة مهمة لجنة التحقيق إلى 15 حزيران decided the international Security Council to extend the mission of the investigative commission until 15 June 2007. |
| 11. | وسمح And allows | لها بتقديم دعمها التقني للسلطات اللبنانية في تحقيقها بشأن "اعتداءات إرهابية" أخرى ارتكبت في لبنان... it to present its technical support to the Lebanese authorities investigating other "terrorist attacks" which were committed in Lebanon... |
| 12. | وكان براميرتس (Kaana) Brammertz | قد طلب من مجلس الأمن التابع للأمم المتحدة تمديد فترة عمل اللجنة بهدف التمكن من إنهاء عمله. (qad) requested from the UN Security Council an extension of the commission work in order to finalize his job. |
| 13. | وقال Said-he | في تقريره الأخير أن طلب المعلومات و الوثائق تمت تلبية ضمن الوقت المحدد، غير أن التعاون التام وغير المشروط لسوريا يظل مهماً جداً. in his last report, that the request for information and documents was granted on time, however, complete and unconditional cooperation from Syria is still very important. |
| 14. | وكان تقريران سابقان للرئيس السابق للجنة التحقيق ديتلف ميليس (Kaana) two previous reports by former chief investigator, Detlev Mehlis, | قد أشارا إلى تورط مسؤولين سوريين ولبنانيين كبار في واقعة الاغتيال (qad) implicated Syrian and Lebanese senior officials in the assassination. |
| 15. | ونفى الأسد Denied al-Assad | تورطه أو تورط بلاده في اغتيال الحريري his or his country's involvement in the assassination of Hariri. |
| 16. | و سبق أن تعهد الأسد Previously promised al-Assad | بمعاقبة أي مسؤول سوري يتبين تورطه في مؤامرة اغتيال الحريري بتهمة الخيانة. to punish any Syrian official proved to be involved in the conspiracy of Hariri's assassination by inflicting the treason penalty. |
| 17. | و التقى براميرتس Met Brammertz | الرئيس السوري... لبحث ملايسات قضية الاغتيال the Syrian President...to discuss the circumstances |

| | | |
|-----|--|--|
| | | of Hariri's assassination. |
| 18. | ويتولى البلجيكي سيرج براميرتس Heads Serge Brammertz | رئاسة لجنة التحقيق في واقعة اغتيال الحريري و 22 آخرين في انفجار شاحنة في بيروت... the investigation into Hariri's assassination and 22 others in Beirut truck bomb. |

Table 5.13 Theme-Rheme Organization in the CNN Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Table 5.13 shows that “Brammertz” is a continuous Theme in clauses 4, 6, 9, 12, 13, 17 and 18. “The last report of the investigative commission”, in clauses 5 and 7, and “Al-Assad”, in clauses 15 and 16, are also continuous Themes. R1, “receives Brammertz report”, becomes the Theme of the next main clause, “received UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan”. R3, “Serge Brammertz, the international chief investigator”, becomes T4. R4, “the report”, becomes T5. R10, “The UN Security Council”, becomes the T11. R14, “Syrian officials”, becomes R15, “Al-Assad denied”. No derive themes are identified in this report. The thematic patterns in the CNN Arabic news report on Hariri's murder investigation are presented in the following figure:

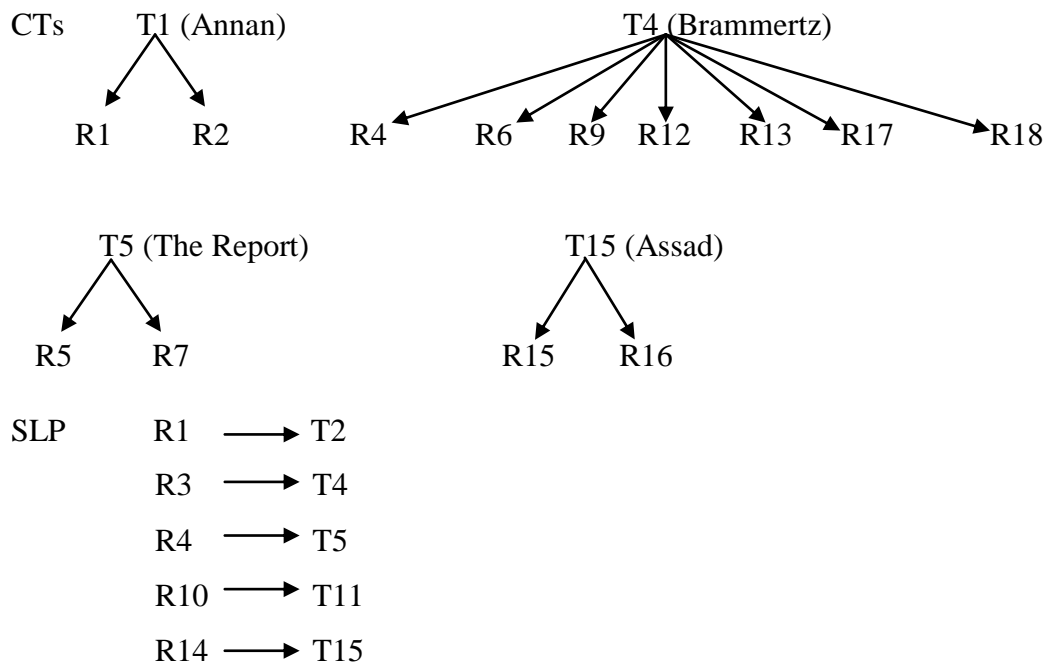


Figure 5.11 Thematic Patterns in the CNN Arabic News Report on Hariri's Murder Probe

Figure 5.11 shows that the CNN Arabic news report on Hariri's murder has four continuous Themes, five simple linear progressions and no derived Themes. “Brammertz”, who is the UN Chief Investigator into Hariri's murder, functions as a dominant Theme in seven main clauses in the CNN Arabic report. The global topic,

“Brammertz’s latest report” is conveyed by the dominant continuous Themes: “Brammertz” and “the report” which are identified in Figure 5.11. Like the BBC, this report does not emphasise the cooperation of Syria in its headline. The macropropositions in this report are: Brammertz hands his report to Annan, Syria’s cooperation, Lebanese accuse Syria of murder, previous investigations implicate Syria in assassinations and Syria’s reaction. As manifested in the macrostructure here more emphasis is placed on the accusation against Syria and its implication in killing Lebanese politicians than on Syria’s cooperation. Syria’s cooperation is mentioned once (clause 6), whereas the accusation and implications are mentioned at least four times (clauses 7, 8, 14 and 15). The presentation of information and macropropositions in both the BBC and CNN Arabic reports reflect an angle of the story which is not reported by other Arabic reports in this group. The analysis also shows that both the BBC and CNN media present similar political and ideological representation of Syria in their English and Arabic reports.

In terms of TP, the six Arabic news reports investigated here tend to focus on the following Themes, “Brammertz”, “The UN latest report” and “the UN investigation team”. The results of the thematic pattern analysis of the Arabic group are presented in Table 5.14 below.

| TP | Continuous | Derived | Simple Linear |
|-----------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| <i>Teshreen</i> | 2 | 0 | 2 |
| Al-Manar | 2 | 0 | 4 |
| Al-Jazeera | 3 | 1 | 1 |
| <i>Alarab</i> | 4 | 0 | 5 |
| BBC | 2 | 5 | 3 |
| CNN | 4 | 0 | 5 |
| Totals | 17 | 6 | 20 |

Table 5.14 Thematic Patterns in the Arabic News Report on Hariri’s Murder Probe

The analysis of TP reveals that the Arabic news reports have seventeen continuous Themes, six derived Themes and twenty simple linear progression patterns. The simple linear progression TP is the most frequent pattern in this group.

Having analysed the global structures of news reports in this case study, the next section will summarize the findings of the macrostructure analysis in this group, present the

results and discuss the findings related to the Thematic Progression analysis in the hundred news reports comprising this corpus.

5.1.2. Findings of the Global Structural Analysis

The analysis of thematic patterns in the data is carried out in the same way as illustrated in section 5.1.1. For reasons of space and simplicity, only the results of this analysis are presented and discussed here. The data, which are divided into five groups: group 1 deals with the assassination of Gibran Tueni, group 2 deals with Hariri's murder probe, group 3 deals with the accusations of Syria's involvement in the assassinations of Lebanese politicians, group 4 deals with the assassination of Pierre Gemayel and group 5 deals with the assassination of Walid Eido, are analysed in terms of TP in the English and Arabic news reports. The results of the TP analysis in the English-language news reports in each group are presented in Table 5.15.

| TP in English | Continuous | Derived | Simple Linear |
|----------------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| Group 1 | 25 | 17 | 38 |
| Group 2 | 14 | 7 | 13 |
| Group 3 | 33 | 19 | 35 |
| Group 4 | 38 | 19 | 53 |
| Group 5 | 42 | 16 | 40 |
| Total | 152 | 78 | 179 |

Table 5.15 Thematic Patterns in the English Data

The second column in Table 5.15 presents the number of the continuous Themes found in the analysis of the English news reports in each group of the data. The third column presents the number of the derived Themes. The fourth column presents an account of the simple linear progression patterns. The first row in Table 5.15, for example, shows that the English news reports of group one have 25 continuous Themes, 17 derived Themes and 38 simple linear progression patterns. The number of continuous Themes, in group 1, is less than the simple linear progression patterns. In groups 2 and 5, the number of continuous Themes is close to the number of simple linear progression patterns. However, the number of the continuous Themes in group 1, 3 and 4 is much less than the number of simple linear progression patterns. In total, the analysis the English news reports shows 152 continuous Themes, 78 derived Themes and 179 simple linear progression patterns. The continuous thematic pattern is less frequent than

the simple linear progression pattern and more frequent than the derived one. In general, the English news reports tend to use simple linear progression pattern more than the other two patterns.

The results of thematic pattern analysis in the Arabic news reports in each group of the data are presented in Table 5.16 below:

| TP in Arabic | Continuous | Derived | Simple Linear |
|---------------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| Group 1 | 33 | 34 | 13 |
| Group 2 | 19 | 6 | 22 |
| Group 3 | 47 | 29 | 21 |
| Group 4 | 43 | 15 | 36 |
| Group 5 | 60 | 37 | 31 |
| Total | 202 | 121 | 123 |

Table 5.16 Thematic Patterns in the Arabic Data

Table 5.16 shows that the Arabic news reports in group 1 of the data have almost the same number of continuous Themes and derived Themes, but much fewer simple linear progression patterns. The Arabic news reports in group 2 of the data have more simple linear progression patterns than continuous and derived Themes. The other three groups, 3, 4 and 5, show that continuous Themes are used more often in the Arabic news reports than derived Themes and simple linear progression patterns. In general, the fifty Arabic news reports show a preference towards using the continuous thematic pattern.

The use of the three thematic patterns in the selected English and Arabic news reports are presented in Table 5.17. Table 5.17 shows that in the English news reports 37% of the thematic patterns are continuous Themes, 19% are derived and 44% are simple linear progression. In the Arabic news reports 45% of the thematic patterns are continuous, 27% are derived and 28% are simple linear progression.

| TP | Continuous | Derived | Simple Linear |
|-----------------------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| English News Reports | 37% | 19% | 44% |
| Arabic News Reports | 45% | 27% | 28% |

Table 5.17 Thematic Patterns in the Data

To sum up, the English news reports tend to use the simple linear progression patterns, whereas the Arabic reports tend to use the continuous thematic patterns. Many linguists have studied the relation between Thematic Progression patterns and the rhetorical purpose of text, including Hatim (1989) and Hatim and Mason (1990) (see section 2.3.2.1). Hatim and Mason (1990) suggest that an emerging simple linear progression pattern relay an element of evaluativeness and judgement. A continuous Theme pattern, on the other hand, relays non-evaluativeness and is compatible with expository texts. The analysis of Theme-Rheme patterns in the corpus reveals that the English news reports tend to be evaluative, whereas the Arabic news reports tend to be neutral. The results of this analysis will be further discussed in relation to the thematic and informational analysis of main clauses in the English- and Arabic-language news reports.

In terms of the macrostructure analysis, the thematic patterns identified in each report reflect the global topic of the news discourse. Section 2.3.2.1 discussed that the global topic of a news report may, or may not, be expressed in the headline. The global topic of the English and Arabic news reports in the case study is “Brammertz’s latest report on Hariri’s murder”. “Brammertz’s report”, as the TP analysis reveals, is a dominant Theme in both the English and Arabic reports. However, the way the global topic is presented in the English headlines differs from that in the Arabic ones. In the English reports, with the exception of *Syria Times*, the following macropropositions prevail:

1. new leads/amassing evidence in Hariri’s murder investigation: a suicide bomber killed Hariri
2. the possibility of Syria’s involvement in his assassination
3. the lack of Syria’s cooperation with the investigation

In the Arabic reports, the following macropropositions prevail:

1. findings in Hariri’s murder investigation
2. details of the investigation report
3. Syria’s cooperation is appreciated

The English news reports focus on the “growing evidence in Hariri’s murder investigation” and present this in their headlines. The Arabic news report, however, focus on “Syria’s cooperation” both as a macroproposition and in the headlines. In other words, the English reports reflect an angle of the story, which differs from that in

the Arabic reports. The analysis of global topics, macropropositions and news headlines, i.e. macrostructure, reveals different political and ideological interpretations of Syria's role in relation to the recent assassinations in Lebanon.

The next section will present the local level analysis of structures in the second and third groups of the data. It will focus on Theme/Rheme and Given/New information and their roles in identifying underlying ideologies regarding the way Syria is presented in the selected news reports and news media.

5.2 The Analysis of Local Structures

This section aims at investigating the way Syria is portrayed in the data, particularly in the second and third groups where the coverage of this issue is succinct and leads itself to analysis. More specifically, this section investigates the thematic structures at the clause level and the roles of Theme/Rheme and Given/New information in elucidating underlying ideologies in these structures. The presentation of Syria in terms of its *cooperation* with the UN investigation team, the US *accusation* against Syria and the *new leads and evidence*, which the US claims to have against Syria, Iran and Hezbollah, are the main propositions under investigation. This section offers a qualitative analysis and focuses on terms such as “cooperation”, “accusations” and “mounting evidence” in marked and unmarked thematic structures in the English and Arabic clauses.

5.2.1. The Analysis of the English News Reports in Group 2

The mapping of the informational level, Given-New, onto the thematic level, Theme-Rheme, and its analysis in the data can help to reveal the way Syria is portrayed by news media in the English- and Arabic-language news reports. At the thematic level, elements in Theme position are more important than elements in Rheme position in the sense that they attract the readers' attention to what is presented first (section 3.4.3.2). At the informational level, elements which convey New information are more important than elements which convey Given information (section 3.4.3.1). Thus, elements in Theme position which reveal New information are both thematically and informationally significant in highlighting the information and presenting the message intended in the data. Given and New information are determined by their recoverability, predictability and positions both at the local and global levels of

discourse (see section 3.4.3.1). Information in the headline and lead paragraphs, for example, are more important than information presented last in the news report (Khalil 200). Textual and Contextual dimensions are also considered when analysing information in these reports. This will help determine the cognitive properties of discourse, i.e. how information is presented by news producers vs. how it is understood by readers. Syntactic and emphatic devices such as *kaana*, *qad* and *inna*, tense (past/present) and aspect (perfect/imperfect) help to indicate background or foreground information in discourse (Khalil 2000). News headlines, in particular, catch the reader's eyes first. Elements in Theme position of news headlines come first not only in the clause, but also in the news report as a whole¹⁹¹. Headlines usually convey New information because discourse has to start somewhere and information in news headlines cannot be recovered or mentioned before¹⁹². Halliday (2004: 89) refers to these elements as "discourse initiating units". News headlines can thus be thematically and informationally significant in revealing ideological representations in the analysis of the data.

The analysis of the selected English-language news reports in group 2 (G2) shows that these reports use New information in Theme and Rheme positions to construct a certain social reality regarding the presentations of Syria in the recent events in Lebanon. The analysis of *Syria Times* and SANA English reports reveals that "Syria's cooperation" is presented as New information in Theme position of the headlines, as illustrated below¹⁹³:

5.1. *Syria cooperation appreciated*¹⁹⁴. (Syria Times, G2)

5.2. *Syria's cooperation with the International Investigation Committee satisfactory, Brammertz says.* (SANA, G2)

"Syria's cooperation" and its "assistance", in these examples, are thematically and informationally significant. It highlights Syria's innocence and emphasises its positive role in the headlines. The management of information and the selection of Theme-Rheme elements in these headlines seek to influence the readers into accepting a certain position, namely Syria is the victim rather than the suspect. These elements are

¹⁹¹ These are referred to as global themes, or topics, see section 2.3.3.1.

¹⁹² The Theme in news headline may convey old information if earlier reports are taken into account.

¹⁹³ See appendix B.

¹⁹⁴ Italics indicate New information.

emphasised not only in Theme positions of *Syria Times* and SANA's headlines, but also throughout these reports. The assistance of the Syrian government is described as "satisfactory" in example 5.3.

5.3. News agencies reported that Brammertz made clear in his report Syria's assistance was *satisfactory* and that Syria responded to all requests of his committee within time frame allocated. (Syria Times, clause 3)

"Satisfactory" in example 5.3 is presented as New information in Rheme position. Syria's cooperation in example 5.4 is also emphasised in the same report.

5.4. During his meeting with Foreign Minister Walid Moualem yesterday, UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan *expressed his gratitude* to Syria for her [sic] cooperation with the committee. (Syria Times, clause 4)

Annan expresses his "gratitude" to Syria in example 5.4. "Gratitude" is presented as New information in Rheme position. The *Syria Times* report seeks to create a subject position, which eliminates all contradictions in its discourse. It eliminates any implications or accusations against Syria of being behind the killings in Lebanon and focuses instead on its positive role with the UN investigation. The analysis reveals an ideological representation of Syria and a construction of social reality in the *Syria Times* English report.

Similarly, the Al-Manar English news report emphasises Syria's cooperation as illustrated in the following examples:

5.6. A UN report release Monday... *noted further Syrian cooperation* with the probe. (Al-Manar, clause 2)

5.7. The UN report... also said UN investigators remained *generally satisfied* with the cooperation of Syria (Al-Manar, clause 7)

5.8. The cooperation that the commission has received from the Syrian Arab Republic has remained *generally satisfactory*. (Al-Manar, clause 8)

The “Syrian cooperation” is presented as New information in Rheme position in example 5.6¹⁹⁵. “Generally satisfied” and “generally satisfactory”, in examples 5.7 and 5.8 respectively, are also presented as New information in Rheme position. Syria’s implication in Hariri’s murder is mentioned once in Rheme position of the ninth main clause in this report, example 5.9.

5.9. A controversial report by Brammertz’s German predecessor, Detlev Mehlis, had implicated senior officials from Syria. (Al-Manar, clause 9)

The past perfect tense, “had implicated”, in example 5.9, suggests that the accusation against Syria is intended as background and old information. The sequence of events at the global level of discourse also suggests that clause 5.9 is intended as background and less important information, whereas clauses 5.6, 5.7 and 5.8 are intended as New and more important information. Clause 5.9 appears towards the end of this report, whereas clauses 5.6, 5.7 and 5.8 appear in the lead paragraphs. The analysis reveals similar ideological representations in the English news reports taken from *Syria Times*, SANA and Al-Manar.

The informational focus, i.e. elements revealing New information, in Al-Jazeera’s headline, of group 2, falls on the rhematic elements, as illustrated in example 5.10 (see Table 5.3, section 5.1.1.1):

5.10. Hariri Inquiry confirms suicide bomb (Al-Jazeera, clause 1)

The Al-Jazeera report presents some details of the “evidence” regarding Hariri’s murder probe, namely Hariri killed by “a suicide bomb”. Details also include the bomber’s tooth which is believed to belong to someone “who was not from Lebanon” (example 5.11).

5.11. Evidence found at the scene of the blast also included a tooth, probably of the bomber, which featured an unspecified “distinguishing mark” on its crown suggesting that he may not have been from Lebanon, the report said. (Al-Jazeera, clause 6)

The New information in Rheme position of example 5.11 suggests indirectly a link between Hariri’s murder and the involvement of Syria in the crime. Syria’s implication

¹⁹⁵ See Table 5.2, section 5.1.1.1.

in the crime is emphasised four times in Rheme positions in the Al-Jazeera report, as illustrated below:

5.12. Brammertz's predecessor... had said the killing's complexity suggested that *the Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri's assassination.* (Al-Jazeera, clause 10)

5.13. In one report, Mehlis *had implicated Syria's military intelligence chief.* (Al-Jazeera, clause 11)

5.14. Al-Hariri was a quiet opponent to Syria's 30-year dominance of Lebanon. (Al-Jazeera, clause 14)

5.15. Al-Hariri supporter blamed the attack on Syria, which has denied any role. (Al-Jazeera, clause 16)

Examples 5.12 and 5.13 appear towards the middle of the Al-Jazeera report, which has sixteen main clauses. This suggests that the information presented here is less important than the one in the lead paragraph and more important than the one at the end of this report (examples 5.14 and 5.16). The Rhematic elements in examples 5.12 and 5.13, "the Syrian and Lebanese intelligence services played a role in al-Hariri's murder" and "had implicated Syria's military intelligence chief" respectively, are not mentioned before in this report, hence readers may interpret this as New information. Examples 5.14 and 5.15 appear at the end of the Al-Jazeera report; hence it is intended as background information. Similarly, *Alarab's* report emphasises the connection between Syria and Hariri's assassination, on the one hand, and the growing evidence which suggests Syria's responsibility for his assassination, on the other. The *Alarab* report thematizes "Hariri murder probe" as Given information in the headline (example 5.13).

5.13. Hariri murder probe *nearer to trial* (Alarab, clause 1)

The murder of Rafiq Hariri took place on 14 February 2005. Since then the UN investigation has been the subject of many news reports. Thus, the thematic elements in example 5.13 are considered as old information. New information in the headline is presented by the Rheme, "nearer to trial". New information in the headline suggests that the UN investigators possessed new evidence which will enable them to bring Hariri's murder inquiry into closure and bring suspects to trial. This evidence, of which

no details are given in the report, is continuously stressed as New information in Rheme positions. *Alarab*'s report mentions "*amassing evidence*" that would "stand up in court" as New information in Rheme position (example 5.14)¹⁹⁶.

5.14. The UN investigator into the slaying of Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq al-Hariri said on Monday he was *close to amassing evidence in the case that would stand up in court*. (Alarab, clause 2)

It also emphasises the existence of "facts" that are established "to an evidential standard" and stresses "new evidence that Hariri's killers had carefully monitored his movements" as New information in Rheme positions in the following examples:

5.15. John Bolton, the US ambassador to the United Nations, said the report's reference to *establishing the facts "to an evidential standard" signalled that Brammertz was "getting closer and closer to the point where he would be ready for a trial*. (Alarab, clause 13)

5.16. Investigators said they were looking at *new evidence that Hariri's killers had carefully monitored his movements before acting and possibly even conducted a rehearsal of the attack*. (Alarab, clause 16)

Further analysis also reveals an emphasis on Syria's implication in the crime and the many UN "formal requests for assistance in the Syrian government over the past three months" as New information in Rheme position in the *Alarab* report (see R7, Table 5.4). Syria's cooperation is mentioned once as New information in Theme position (example 5.17).

5.17. Syria's cooperation "*remains an important component of the ongoing work*" of his staff, Brammertz said in a progress report to the UN Security Council...

However, this cooperation is not presented positively here. Syria's lack of cooperation is not mentioned before in the report and thus considered as New information in Theme position in example 5.17. The analysis suggests that both Al-Jazeera and *Alarab* reports seek to rationalize the involvement of Syria by proposing strong links and emphasising Syria's implication in these crimes. The proposition that Syria is behind the crimes committed in Lebanon becomes commonsensical assumption here by means of naturalization, rationalization and habitualization of discourse. The analysis of

¹⁹⁶ See also table 5.4, section 5.1.1.1.

Given/New information in Theme and Rheme positions in the *Alarab*'s English report reveals a different ideological representation of Syria from that in the *Syria Times*, SANA, and Al-Manar English reports.

The BBC English headline, "Hariri *killed by suicide bomber*", reveals Given information in Theme position and New information in Rheme position. The BBC report mentions "new evidence" and "new leads" as New information in Rheme positions in the following clauses (see also Table 5.5).

5.18. A UN inquiry into the murder of former Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri has found *new evidence* that he was probably killed by a suicide bomber. (BBC, clause 2)

5.19. The report says *new leads have been uncovered*. (BBC, clause 4)

Syria's cooperation is mentioned once as New information in Rheme position in the BBC report of group 2, as shown below:

5.20. The latest report says *Syria's cooperation* with the inquiry has been *generally satisfactory*. (BBC, clause 13)

Syria' cooperation, which is New information, is described as "satisfactory", which is also New information in the BBC report. However, this cooperation "did not mean Syria was in the clear", as noted by Bolton, the US ambassador to UN, example 5.21.

5.21. However, US ambassador to the UN John Bolton said the latest report *did not mean that Syria was in the clear*. (BBC, clause 14)

Detlev Mehlis, a previous investigator, also accuses Syria, in example 5.22 of "obstructing the investigation".

5.22. A previous leader of the inquiry, Detlev Mehlis, *accused Syria of obstructing the investigation* (BBC, clause 12)

The analysis of New information, in italics, in examples 5.21 and 5.22 suggests a strong implication of Syria in the recent assassinations. Similarly, the CNN news report presents "new leads" as New information in Theme position in the news headline,

5.23. New leads in Hariri probe. (CNN, clause 1)

Hariri, who is described in Rheme position in example 5.24 as “an outspoken critic of Syria” was “*himself aware of a highlighted threat against him*”.

5.24. Evidence has emerged, the report says, that Hariri, an outspoken critic of Syrian involvement in Lebanon, was *himself aware of a “highlighted threat against him*.
(CNN, clause 6)

The rhematic elements, “was himself aware of a highlighted threat”, in the above example present New information which is not mentioned before and cannot be predicted from previous contexts. Hariri’s strong opposition to Syria and threats against his life suggest a link between his murder and his opposition to Syria. This link is emphasised later in the report by rhematic elements revealing New information in the eighth, ninth and eleventh main clauses of the report, as illustrated below:

5.25. Previous UN reports have cited evidence that President Bashar al-Assad of Syria had personally threatened Hariri.
(CNN, clause 8)

5.26. An earlier UN investigation report also implicated Syrians, including Syria’s military intelligence chief and al-Assad’s brother-in-law.
(CNN, Clause 9)

5.27. The United States has suggested that the government of Syria is behind the Hariri murder as well as that of 14 others who were also outspoken against Syrian involvement in Lebanon.
(CNN, clause 11)

The rhematic elements in the above examples are presented as New information. This information is neither predicted nor mentioned before in the report. The analysis reveals that Syria and its president are presented by growing “evidence” as responsible for the assassination of Hariri, as illustrated in the previous examples. The rhematic elements, “cited evidence that President Bashar al-Assad of Syria had personally threatened Hariri”, “implicated Syrians” and “the government of Syria is behind the Hariri murder” are presented as New information in examples 5.25, 5.26 and 5.27 respectively. The “growing evidence” and “new leads” implicating Syria in Hariri’s murder are also emphasised all through the CNN report (see T1, T2, T3, R4, R5, T6 and R8 in Table 5.6, section 5.1.1.1). These elements are mostly presented as New information, which strongly suggests Syria’s responsibility for the assassinations in Lebanon. The analysis of the BBC and the CNN English reports reveals the roles of

Theme/Rheme and Given/New information in presenting specific social meanings and reality. The use of persuasive techniques such as emphasis and repetition of certain Rhematic elements as New information seek to influence the readers into adopting a particular representation, namely Syria as a possible perpetrator, threat and enemy of peace.

The thematic and informational analysis of the English-language news reports in group 2 of the data reveals that these reports, except for *Syria Times*, SANA and Al-Manar¹⁹⁷, tend to use New information in Theme and Rheme positions to emphasise Syria's connection with the recent assassinations in Lebanon. The analysis indicates a process of naturalization, which seeks to rationalize the presentation of Syria in these reports as a suspect of the crimes and an enemy of Lebanon.

5.2.2 The Analysis of the Arabic News Reports in Group 2

Unlike the English news reports in group 2, the Arabic news reports present a different picture of Syria. The “accusation” of Syria in these reports and its implication in Hariri's murder are either not mentioned, as is the case with the *Teshreen*, SANA, Al-Manar and Al-Jazeera reports, or are presented as old and background information, as will be discussed shortly. At the same time, “Syria's cooperation” is emphasised throughout the Arabic news reports and presented as New information both in Theme and Rheme positions. Most of these reports focus on “Syria's cooperation” and describe its “assistance” as “satisfactory”, particularly in the headlines as illustrated in the following examples¹⁹⁸:

5.28. *براميرتس سلم تقريره إلى عنان: المساعدات السورية كانت مرضية*

Brammertz handed his report to Annan: Syria's assistance was satisfactory.

(*Teshreen's* headline)

5.29. *براميرتس يؤكد أن المساعدة التي تلقتها لجنته من سورية كانت مرضية*

Brammertz confirms Syria's assistance with his committee was satisfactory.

(SANA's headline)

5.30. *براميرتس يعتبر تعاون سوريا مرض*

Brammertz considers Syria's cooperation satisfactory.

(Al-Manar's headline)

¹⁹⁷ These news media are either controlled by the Syrian government, SANA and *Syria Times*, or largely pro-Syrian, Al-Manar, as discussed in section 4.2.3.

¹⁹⁸ See Appendix B.

5.31. سوريا تصف تقرير براميرتس بالإيجابي
Syria describes Brammertz's report positively. (Al-Jazeera's headline)

5.32. المحقق الدولي يثنى على تعاون سوريا
The International Investigator compliments Syria's cooperation. (Alarab's headline)

New information in these headlines is presented in italics. “Syria’s cooperation”, “assistance” and “satisfactory” are presented in bold face in these examples. The headlines above convey New information which cannot be predicted nor mentioned before in these reports. The Arabic news reports usually present headlines by using a marked thematic structure. The syntactic order of Theme (Subject-verb/verb-Subject) is preserved in the translations of the Arabic examples in this chapter (see section 4.5). In *Teshreen*’s headline, example 5.28, “Syria’s assistance”, which is New information, functions as a marked Theme. “Syria’s assistance” is described as “satisfactory” in the same example. “Satisfactory” functions as the Rheme proper, i.e. the element which receives much focus in Rheme position, and conveys New information in example 5.28. The thematic and informational structure of the headline in *Teshreen*’s report establishes from the beginning Syria’s efforts to assist in the investigation into Hariri’s murder. Syria’s “assistance” and “cooperation” are also emphasised throughout *Teshreen*’s report, as illustrated in the following examples:

5.33. وأشارت الوكالات إلى أن براميرتس أوضح في تقريره أن المساعدة التي تلقتها لجنته من سورية كانت مرضية و أن سورية استجابت لطلبات اللجنة ضمن الوقت الزمني المطلوب.
Reported agencies that Brammertz made clear in his report that the assistance his commission received from Syria was satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated. (*Teshreen*)

5.34. و كان الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة قد عبر عن شكره لسورية لتعاونها مع اللجنة
(Kaana) the UN Secretary-General (qad) expressed gratitude to Syria for its cooperation with the commission. (*Teshreen*)

The Rheme, “Brammertz made clear in his report that the assistance his commission received from Syria was satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated”, is presented as New information in example 5.33. Example 5.34 is a thematic marked clause in Arabic, which starts with an empty verb, (kaana), followed by a noun, “UN Secretary-General”. “Cooperation” in example

5.34 functions as part of the rhematic elements which convey New information. The marked thematic structure and the emphatic device **قد** (qad), in bold face, emphasise Anan's "gratitude to Syria for its cooperation". "Gratitude" functions as the Rheme proper and conveys New information in *Teshreen*'s report. The analysis reveals the use of persuasive devices and techniques in the *Teshreen* report to influence the readers' opinion into accepting an ideological representation of Syria as cooperative and innocent. Similar representations are identified in the SANA and Al-Manar reports, which emphasise Syria's "cooperation" as New information in their headlines, examples 5.29 and 5.30 above. Syria's cooperation is described as "satisfactory", which is also New information in these headlines. The Al-Manar report mentions Syria's cooperation in example 5.35.

5.35. و وصف التقرير مستوى التعاون الذي أمنته سوريا من خلال فترة إعداد التقرير بالمرضي حيث أن سوريا ردت على مطالب اللجنة خلال الوقت المحدد.

Described the report **Syria's cooperation**, during the process of preparing the report, as **satisfactory** and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated. (Al-Manar, clause 16)

The Rheme, "Syria's cooperation, during the process of preparing the report, as satisfactory and that Syria responded to all requests of the commission within time frame allocated", although predicted from Al-Manar's headline, is presented to the readers as New information in example 5.35. The news headline in Al-Jazeera's Arabic report presents "Syria" as a marked Theme (example 5.31). The Theme, "Syria", and Rheme, "receives Brammertz report positively", in Al-Jazeera's headline convey New information. The UN report which describes Syria positively is also emphasised in Rheme positions of the second main clause, "the report by Serge Brammertz ...as positive", and the third main clause, "that the report is positive" in the same report (see Table 5.10, section 5.1.1.2). The Al-Jazeera Arabic report, unlike the English one, does not use "new leads", "fresh tests" or "mounting evidence" against Syria¹⁹⁹. It uses instead "initial information", example 5.36, and "belief", example 5.37.

5.36. و أظهرت المعلومات الأولية الواردة في التقرير أن التفجير الذي استهدف الحريري نفذ على الأرجح باستخدام 1800 كغ من المتفجرات بدلاً من 1200 كما كان يعتقد

Showed the **initial information** mentioned in the report that the blast which targeted Hariri used probably 1800 kg of explosives and not 1200 kg as was believed before. (Al-Jazeera, clause 8)

¹⁹⁹ See section 5.2.1.

5.37. ويقول التقرير إن التحقيقات تعزز افتئاعا بوجود رابط بين 14 هجوماً ارتكبت بلبنان... منها العملية التي أدت إلى اغتيال الحريري...

Says the report that the investigations support *the belief that there is a link between the 4 attacks in Lebanon ...including the operation that caused Hariri's assassination.* (Al-Jazeera, clause 10)

“Initial information”, in example 5.36, functions as the Theme proper and present old and predicted information. “Belief”, in example 5.37, functions as part of the rhematic elements and present New information. The previous reports, namely *Teshreen*, SANA, Al-Manar and Al-Jazeera, do not mention the “accusation” of Syria or its involvement in Hariri’s murder. The management of information and the presentation of the thematic structures in these reports indicate an exercise of power and control by these media. Hegemony and persuasion are discursive and social properties of ideology, which manifest in these reports.

The *Alarab* report also focuses on the Syrian cooperation with the UN team. “Compliments Syria’s cooperation”, in *Alarab*’s headline (example 5.32), is presented as New information in Rheme position. In example 5.38 below, from the same report, the emphatic device لكن *lakinna*²⁰⁰, which is an argumentative device frequently used in editorials, and the marked thematic structure in Arabic help to put more emphasis on elements in Rheme position, “cooperated with the UN investigation”, than elements in Theme position, “the Syrian officials”. The effect of using such a structure in Arabic can be compared to the use of the emphatic “do” before the verb in English, as illustrated below:

5.38. ولكن المسؤولين السوريين تعاونوا مع تحقيق الأمم المتحدة

(Lakinna) the Syrian officials cooperated with the UN investigation.

However, the Syrian officials did cooperate with the UN investigation.

(*Alarab*, clause 10)

In the same report, the accusation against Syria of killing Hariri is presented once as background and old information in Theme position in example 5.39.

5.39. و أديننت سوريا بمسؤوليتها عن القتل.

[And was accused] Syria of being responsible for the killing] (*Alarab*, clause 7)

²⁰⁰ This can be translated as “however”.

The past tense “was” in example 5.39 presents the elements in Theme and Rheme positions as old information. This clause is intended as background information in the *Alarab* report. “New leads” is mentioned only once in Theme position of clause 16 in *Alarab* news report (see Table 5.11, section 5.1.1.2). There is, however, no mention of the bomber’s “tooth” or that he is not from Lebanon. The presentation of information in the headline and the selection of background/foreground information in the thematic structures of the *Alarab* report strongly imply an exercise of power and an ideological representation of Syria, which is similar to that in *Teshreen*, SANA, Al-Manar and Al-Jazeera Arabic reports.

Unlike the previous Arabic reports, the BBC and the CNN do not mention Syria’s “cooperation” in their headlines. Syria’s cooperation is mentioned once, in these reports, as illustrated in these two examples:

5.40. قال براميرتس إن التعاون من الجانب السوري كان مرضياً بشكل عام.

Said Brammertz that Syria’s cooperation was satisfactory in general.

(BBC, clause 8)

5.41. كما ألمح براميرتس في هذا التقرير إلى تعاون سوريا مع أعضاء لجنة التحقيق.

Hinted Brammertz in his report to *Syria’s cooperation* with the investigation committee.

(CNN, clause 6)

“Syria’s cooperation” which is New information, is described as “satisfactory”, which is also New information in Rheme position, in example 5.41 in the BBC report. “Syria’s cooperation” and “satisfactory” are not mentioned before in the report and cannot be predicted. In example 5.41, the verb “hinted”, which is New information in Theme position, suggests a weak emphasis on the significance of Syria’s cooperation. Syria’s cooperation in example 5.41 is also New information which is not mentioned before in the CNN report. The accusation against Syria is mentioned twice in the BBC report, examples 5.42 and 5.43, and once in the CNN report, example 5.44.

5.42. اتهم أنصاره سوريا بالمسؤولية عنها.

Accused his supporters Syria of being responsible²⁰¹.

(BBC, clause 5)

²⁰¹ Hariri’s supporters.

5.43. كان ديتلف ميليس، الذي رأس التحقيق قبل براميرتس، قد اتهم سورية بعرقلة التحقيق.
(Kaana) Detlev Mehlis, who head the investigation before Brammertz, (qad)
accused Syria of obstructing the investigation. (BBC, clause 7)

5.44. فيما أشار جانب كبير من الرأي العام اللبناني إلى أجهزة الاستخبارات السورية بأصابع الاتهام باعتبارها متورطة في الاعتداء.
Meanwhile, pointed a large number of Lebanese public opinion to the Syrian intelligence with accusing fingers of being an accomplice in the attack.
(CNN, clause 6)

The past tense, “accused”, in example 4.42 suggests that the information in Theme and Rheme positions is old. Similarly, the marked Theme and the empty verb (kaana), in example 5.43, present the Theme, “Detlev Mehlis”, and the Rheme, “had accused Syria of obstructing the investigation”, as old information. The thematic and informational analysis shows that the BBC Arabic report plays down the “accusation” of Syria and its involvement in Hariri’s crime. However, the accusation of Syria in example 5.44 of the CNN report is presented as New information. The thematic elements, “a large number of Lebanese public opinion”, and the rhematic elements, “Syrian intelligence with accusing fingers of being an accomplice in the attack” convey New information. The choice of Theme in this clause is thematically and informationally significant in the analysis of the English and Arabic reports. A comparative analysis of clause 11 in the equivalent English CNN report shows that the “US”, which functions as the Theme, accuses Syria of Hariri’s murder (see section 5.2.1). The United States justifies its accusations later in the English report by claiming to possess “new leads” and “growing evidence” against Syria. The choice of Theme in these clauses suggests that while the CNN Arabic report presents the accusation in terms of a long- time opposition to Syria by Hariri’s party, the CNN English report present it in terms of mounting and well-established “evidence”. In general, the thematic and informational analysis of the CNN Arabic report shows a relatively positive picture of Syria’s cooperation and less implication of its involvement in Hariri’s murder. Persuasion by repetition and emphasis, rationalization and habitualization by eliminating contradictory discourses and the presentation and selection of information in the local structures are techniques used in these Arabic reports to present a certain social reality and an ideological representation of Syria. These reports highlight a pro-Syrian interpretation of the news: Syria is innocent of alleged accusations and cooperative with investigations. The

following sections will study the third group in the data, namely the US accusations to Syria and the “mounting evidence” of its involvement in plans to topple the Lebanese government.

5.2.3 The Analysis of “Evidence” in Group 3

The analysis of group 3 shows that the “evidence”, which may imply Syria’s involvement in the assassinations in Lebanon, is presented differently in the English and Arabic news reports. In the English news reports, “evidence” is mostly presented as New information in Rheme positions of unmarked thematic structures. The analysis indicates a process of persuasion by means of informational emphasis both at the local and global levels of discourse. “Evidence” that Syria is preparing plans to topple the Lebanese government is highlighted in the headlines and/or subheadings of the NBN, Al-Jazeera, BBC and the CNN English news reports, as illustrated below:

5.45. *Washington warns of ‘mounting evidence of bid to bring down Siniora Cabinet.* (NBN headline)

5.46. *The US says it has evidence that Iran, Syria and Hezbollah are making plans to overthrow the Lebanese government.* (Al-Jazeera subheading, clause 2)

5.47. *The United States has said there is “mounting evidence” that Syria, Iran and Hezbollah are planning to topple the Lebanese government* (BBC subheading, clause 2)

5.48. *U.S. sees evidence of plot to topple Lebanese government* (CNN headline)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. The “mounting evidence” which the US claims to have against Syria is also emphasised in these reports, as illustrated in the following examples:

5.49. *Washington warned of “mounting evidence” Wednesday that Iran, Syria and Hezbollah are “preparing plans to topple” the Lebanese government.* (NBN, clause 2)

5.50. The White House said it was *"increasingly concerned by mounting evidence that the Syrian and Iranian governments, Hezbollah, and their Lebanese allies are preparing plans to topple Lebanon's democratically-elected government.*

(BBC, G3, clause 18)

5.51. The White House expressed concern Wednesday over what it called mounting evidence that Syria and Iran are joining with Hezbollah in an attempt to topple the Lebanese government.

(CNN, clause 2)

5.52. The White House said on Wednesday Washington had evidence that Syria, Iran and their allies in the Shi'ite Muslim group were preparing to topple the Beirut government, which is dominated by US-backed politicians.

(Alarab, clause 3)

In example 5.49, "evidence", although mentioned before in the NBN news headlines, is presented as New information in Rheme position. Similarly, "evidence", in examples 5.50 and 5.51, functions as part of the Rheme and is presented as New information. In example 5.52, "evidence" is a rhematic element which conveys New information because it is not mentioned before in the *Alarab* report. The analysis also shows that most English news reports premodify "evidence" by adjectives, such as "mounting", "amassing", "growing" and "increasing". This helps to place more emphasis on the US accusation against Syria and present it as a possible threat to Lebanon. At the global level of structure, these reports present "evidence" in the Summary, i.e. the headline and/or lead paragraphs (see section 2.3.3). The organization and selection of "evidence" as New and high-level information indicate an exercise of power and control by these media.

On the other hand, the analysis of the Arabic news reports shows that "evidence" is mostly presented as Given information in Rheme positions of marked thematic structures. These structures seek to deemphasise the significance of the "evidence" and hence weaken the link between Syria and the Lebanese assassinations. In Syria News, "mounting evidence" is mentioned once in the Arabic report and presented between two converted commas, as illustrated in example 5.53.

5.53. هذا وكان سنو قد قال في وقت سابق إن بلاده قلقة من "الأدلة المتزايدة على أن الحكومتين السورية والإيرانية و حزب الله و حلفاءهم اللبنانيين يعدون خطراً للإطاحة بالحكومة اللبنانية".

(Kaana) Snow (qad) said previously that his country is concerned about the “increasing evidence that Syria, Iran, Hezbollah and its Lebanese allies are preparing plans to topple the Lebanese government. (Syria News, clause 6)

“Increasing evidence” here functions as a rhematic element and is presented as old information. The thematic elements in example 5.53 are marked in Arabic because of the empty verb (kaana) in sentence initial-position followed by a fronted noun, “Snow”. The presence of (kaana), which indicates past tense, suggests that information in Theme and Rheme positions are old and previously mentioned. Moreover, the presence of the Adjunct سابق “previously” in Rheme position in example 5.53 also suggests that this information is old. Similar structures are identified in the BBC and AFP Arabic news reports, as illustrated below:

5.54. وكان الناطق باسم البيت الأبيض توني سنو قال أن هناك أدلة متزايدة تفيد بأن سوريا و إيران و حزب الله يخططون للإطاحة بالحكومة اللبنانية المنتخبة ديمقراطياً و التي يرأسها فؤاد السنيورة"

(Kaana) the White House spokesman, Tony Snow, said there is “mounting evidence that Syria, Iran and Hezbollah are plotting to topple the democratically elected Lebanese government and its president Fouad Siniora”. (BBC, clause 3)

5.55. وكان البيت الأبيض أكد الأربعاء أنه يملك أدلة متزايدة على أن إيران و سوريا و حزب الله اللبناني يعدون خططا للإطاحة بالحكومة اللبنانية برئاسة فؤاد السنيورة.

(Kaana) the White House confirmed on Wednesday that it has increasing evidence that Iran, Syria and Hezbollah are preparing plans to topple the Lebanese government. (AFP, clause 3)

The marked Themes in the BBC Arabic report, example 5.54, and the AFP report, example 5.55, signal past tense. “Mounting evidence” that Syria, along with Hezbollah and Iran, is trying to topple Lebanon is presented as old and controversial information, which does not necessarily represent these media’s political views. The analysis also reveals that details of the alleged “evidence” against Syria are commented on in the Arabic news reports, but not in the English ones. Journalists ask the White House to identify the “increasing leads” that they had against Syria. But the White House “refuses” to give any details and describes this information as “confidential” and “classified”. Examples are presented below:

5.56. و سأل الصحافيون المتحدث سنو عن طبيعة هذه الأدلة
Asked the journalists Snow about the nature of these leads. (NBN, clause 23)

5.57. فرفض الإفصاح عنها موضحاً أنها "سريّة"
Refused-he to disclose them making clear that they are "confidential".
(NBN, clause 24)

5.58. وقد رفض المتحدث باسم البيت الأبيض توني سنو الذي سأله الصحفيون عن هذه الأدلة فقال أنها سرية
ولكن موثوق بها.
(Qad) refused the White House spokesman, Tony Snow, whom was asked by
journalists about the nature of this evidence saying that it is *true but confidential*.
(Alarab, clause 11)

5.59. ورفض مسؤولون أمريكيون تقديم أدلة على الاتهامات الأمريكية قائلين أن تلك المعلومات سرية
Refused American officials to present leads for the American accusations saying
that it is *confidential*.
(Reuters, clause 6)

5.60. فرفض الإفصاح عنها موضحاً أن هذه المعلومات "سرية" لكن موثوق بها.
Refused-he to disclose them saying that the information is "confidential" but true.
(AFP, clause 7)

The analysis of these examples reveals that New information is presented by the verb "refused", in Theme positions in examples 5.57, 5.58, 5.59 and 5.60. "Disclose" and "confidential", in example 5.60 are also presented as New information in Rheme positions. The thematic and informational analysis of the above examples strongly suggests that the "mounting evidence" that the White House claims to have against Syria is nothing more than mere allegation. This analysis helps to identify the social reality constructed in these reports and the ideological representation adopted by these media. The other Arabic reports, namely those from SANA, Al-Manar and the CNN, give no reference at all to this "evidence". In the Al-Manar report, for example, the claim that Syria, Iran and Hezbollah want to topple the Lebanese government is described as "concerns" on the behalf of the Israeli Minister, as illustrated below:

5.61. و بالتوازي مع مساندة واشنطن، عبر وزير الحرب الصهيوني عامير بيريتس عن خشيته مما وصفه
بالجهود المركزة التي تبذلها إيران وسوريا وحزب الله لضعفة استقرار الحكومة اللبنانية
Parallel to Washington's support, the Zionist Minister of war, Perez, expressed his
concerns about what he described as intense efforts by Iran, Syria and Hezbollah to
destabilize Lebanon.
(Al-Manar, clause 3)

Example 5.61 from Al-Manar is a marked thematic structure, which presents old information in Theme position and New information in Rheme position. The marked Theme and the informational focus on elements in Rheme position help to present Syria and Hezbollah as victims of the alleged accusations by the Israeli Minister of Defence. A similar example is identified in the CNN Arabic report, as illustrated below:

5.62. وكانت الإدارة الأمريكية قد وجهت الأربعاء تحذيراً شديداً للجهة لحكومتى سوريا و إيران، لوقف أي محاولات للإطاحة بحكومة رئيس الوزراء اللبناني فؤاد السنيورة.

(Kaanat) the US administration (qad) gave Syria and Iran a strongly worded warning to stop any trial of bringing down the government of the Lebanese Prime Minister, Fouad Siniora. (CNN, clause 11)

The fronted Subject in example 5.62, “the US administration”, is presented as a marked Theme in Arabic. The marked Theme indicates a change of Subject, i.e. the previous nine clauses in the CNN Arabic news report focused on “Syria”, “the Syrian Embassy” and “the statement of the Syrian Embassy” as Subjects. The marked Theme in example 5.62 also signals a change of tense. The empty verb كانت (kaanat) indicates a past event. The elements in Theme and Rheme positions are presented as known or old information. The emphatic device (qad) also draws attention to the subject, “the US administration” who is accusing Syria. The analysis reveals that accusing Syria of murders do not represent the media’s political views and interpretation of the news event.

To sum up, the analysis of group 3 shows that the “evidence”, which the US claims to have against Syria, is presented differently in the thematic and informational structures of the Arabic and English news reports. On the one hand, the English news reports tend to emphasise “evidence”, especially in headlines and subheadings, as New information in Rheme positions of unmarked thematic structures. These reports also tend to pre-modify “evidence” with adjectives, such as “mounting”, “amassing” and “growing”. On the other hand, the Arabic news reports tend either not mention the term “evidence” at all or present it as background information in Rheme positions of marked thematic structures. When “evidence” is mentioned, the analysis of the Arabic news reports suggests that it is nothing more than alleged claims by the US government. This analysis reveals the media’s use of persuasive techniques to influence the readers into adopting certain ideological representations and realities regarding Syria and its role in the assassinations. The analysis also reveals that the media exercises power and control

through the management of information and the selection and organization of Given/New and Theme/Rheme structures in these reports.

5.2.4 The Analysis of “Accusation” in Group 3

The analysis of Theme/Rheme and Given/New information in group 2 of the data revealed that the “accusation” against Syria is presented differently in the English and Arabic news reports (sections 5.2.1 and 5.2.2). The thematic and informational analysis also reveals that, unlike the Arabic news reports in group 3, most of the English news reports in the same group emphasise Syria’s plans, the “mounting evidence” against it and present Syria as a threat to Lebanon (section 5.2.3). In this section, the “accusation” against Syria is investigated in both the English and Arabic news reports of group 3 in order to validate the results found in the previous sections. The analysis of the English news reports in Group 3 of the data reveals that there is no mention of the “accusation” against Syria, except once in the Al-Jazeera report (example 5.63).

5.63. The US accusation came two days after Walid Jumblatt, the leader of Lebanon’s Druze sect, sought US backing for the international court to try suspects in al-Hariri’s murder. (Al-Jazeera, clause 14)

“The US accusation”, in example 5.63, functions as the Theme. Although not mentioned before, “the US accusation” is presented here as old information in Theme position. The English news reports of group 3 focus on the “mounting evidence” that Syria is planning to topple the Lebanese government and present this as true rather than mere allegations (see section 5.2.3).

On the other hand, the Arabic news reports use the term “US accusation” more often than the English ones. The Arabic reports tend to present this “accusation” as old information in group 3. The informational focus in the Arabic news reports here does not fall on “evidence” or the “accusations” against Syria, rather it falls on Syria’s denial and rejection of this accusation, as illustrated in the following examples:

5.64. دمشق ترفض <الالتهامات الأميركية السخيفة> وتنفي تدخلها في لبنان

Damascus rejects <the ludicrous American accusations> and *denies* interference with Lebanon. (NBN headline)

5.65. سوريا تدمحض اتهامات واشنطن

Syria refutes Washington accusations. (Alarab headline)

5.66. سورياتنتفي اتهامات أمريكية بدعم "انقلاب" ضد الحكومة اللبنانية
Syria denies American accusations of supporting Lebanese coup. (CNN headline)

5.67. استهجنّت صحيفة السفير اللبنانية اليوم الاتهامات التي توجه من يطالب برحيل أو تعديل الحكومة
اللبنانية.

Refuted the Lebanese Newspaper Assafir today the accusations which demand the
dissolution or modification of the Lebanese government. (SANA, clause 2)

The verbs “refute” and “deny” are presented as New information in Rheme positions of the NBN, *Alarab* and CNN Arabic news reports, and as New information in Theme position of clause 5.67 from SANA. At the super-structure level, the denial and refute of these accusations by Syria are expressed in the Summary, headline or lead paragraph, of the Arabic reports (see section 2.3.3). Other Arabic news reports describe the US accusations of Syria by using “ludicrous” and “fabrication” as elements revealing New information, as illustrated in the following examples:

5.68. في ردها على الاتهامات التي وجهها المتحدث باسم البيت الأبيض توني سنو لسوريا، أصدرت السفارة
السورية في واشنطن بياناً و صفت فيه الاتهامات "بالسخرية".

In response to the accusations by the White House spokesman, Tony Snow, the
Syrian Embassy in Washington issued a statement describing these accusations as
“ludicrous”. (Syria News, clause 3)

5.69. سوريا: الاتهامات الأمريكية بشأن لبنان "محض افتراء"
Syria: American accusations “mere fabrication”. (Reuters Arabic headline)

The fronted Adjunct in example 5.68, from Syria news, emphasises Syria’s stand from the unfounded “accusations” by the US. The marked thematic clause foregrounds “accusation” as known elements in Theme position, while at the same time focuses on the unknown information conveyed by “ludicrous”. “Mere fabrication” is also presented as New information in Rheme position of the Reuters news headline, example 5.69.

To sum up, the analysis of group 3 of the data reveals that the English news reports tend not to mention the term “accusation”, rather they emphasise the existence of “evidence” which incriminates Syria. The “evidence” against Syria is clearly stated in the Summary of the English reports. The Arabic news reports, on the other hand, present

the “accusation” against Syria as old information, while emphasising Syria’s denial and the lack of evidence against it. The denial of Syria and the weakness of the US accusation are expressed in the Summary of the Arabic reports. The analysis indicates the use of persuasion and emphasis in order to influence the readers’ opinion and construct a reading and subject positions in these reports. This analysis helps to identify the different ideological representations of Syria as either a victim or an enemy in these reports.

5.2.5 Concluding Remarks

This section has analysed the way Syria is presented in the thematic structures and as Given/New information in groups 2 and 3 of the data. The presentation of Syria has been investigated in relation to the “accusation” against it, the “cooperation”, or lack of cooperation, with the UN investigation team, its implication in Hariri’s murder and the “evidence” against it of plans to topple Lebanon. The analysis reveals that most of the English reports in group 2 present the “accusation” against Syria as New information in Rheme positions and emphasise the “evidence” of its involvement in killing Hariri. The analysis of the Arabic news reports of the same group, however, reveals an emphasis on Syria’s “cooperation” as New information both in Theme and Rheme positions, especially in the headlines and subheadings, i.e. the Summary of discourse. The “accusation” against Syria in the Arabic news reports of group 2 is presented mostly as Given information in Rheme positions of marked thematic clauses. The analysis of group 3 reveals that most of the English news reports focus on the “growing/mounting evidence”, which links Syria to the assassinations in Lebanon. The “growing evidence” and the “fresh leads” are presented in the English reports as New information in Rheme positions. However, the Arabic news reports of the same group de-emphasise this evidence and present it as mere allegations and unfounded accusation by the US government. The Accusation of Syria in the Arabic reports of group 3 and the alleged “evidence” against it are mostly presented as background and Given information in marked thematic structures in Arabic. The Arabic reports in this group place more emphasis on Syria’s “denial” of this accusation, especially in the headlines, and the lack of true and substantiated evidence against it.

To sum up, the English and Arabic news reports in the second and third groups of the data focus thematically and informationally on different elements and different aspects

of presenting Syria in relation to the recent assassinations in Lebanon. The organization and selection of Themes and Rhemes, the informational focus at the local and global levels of discourse, the emphasis, repetition and management of information in these reports are indications of the media's use of persuasive techniques to influence the readers' opinion into adopting certain social meanings and realities. The analytical methods and tools carried out here help to identify these meanings and realities and the ideological representations of Syria in these reports. The analysis strongly suggests that the language in which these reports are written, or the addressees of these reports, influence the way the news is presented here, with the exception of SANA and Al-Manar media.

The next section will investigate the various linguistic terms used in the data to describe the Lebanese politicians who expressed strong opposition to the Syrian government. Section 5.3 will analyse these terms as Theme/Rheme and Given/New information and investigate the implications behind the choice of these terms in the thematic structures of main clauses in the selected corpus.

5.3 The Analysis of Terms Opposing Syria: Implications and Presuppositions

5.3.1 Introductory Remarks

One of the key factors in understanding the different news presentation of Syria and the Syrian-Lebanese relationship during a period of political assassinations in Lebanon, between 2005 and 2007, is the analysis of the different terms used to describe the Lebanese figures who openly oppose and criticize Syria and its interference in Lebanon. The aims of this section are identified as follows:

- to investigate these terms and the different implications and presuppositions (see section 2.3.3.2) associated with their use in the English and Arabic news reports
- to analyse these terms in Theme-Rheme structures and as Given/New information in the selected data

The English news reports use three terms to describe Lebanese figures or parties opposing Syria: “critic of Syria”, “opponent of Syria” and “anti-Syria(n)”. In order to investigate the different implications associated with each of these terms and judge their relative negativity, it was essential first to define these terms using an English-English

dictionary. According to Merriam-Webster dictionary²⁰², the verb “criticize” conveys only to “find fault with” and may thus be deemed the least negative of the English news report terms. With respect to the word “opponent”, Merriam-Webster states that the noun “opponent” in English describes one “taking an opposite position” but when used as an adjective it conveys an “actively expressed opposition”. As such, one may deem “opposition” to be marginally more negative than “critic”. Finally, “anti-” is defined as “opposing or hostile to in opinion or practice” and thus spans a range of possible negativities. Further, Merriam-Webster defines the term “anti-American” as “opposed or hostile to the people or the government policies of the United States”. Thus, one may posit that “anti-Syria(n)” conveys opposition and hostility to the people or government of Syria. With the definitions above, one can place these terms on a conceptual scale of relative negativity with “critic of Syria” as least negative, “opponent of Syria” as more negative and “anti-Syria(n)” as most negative, as shown in Figure 5.12.

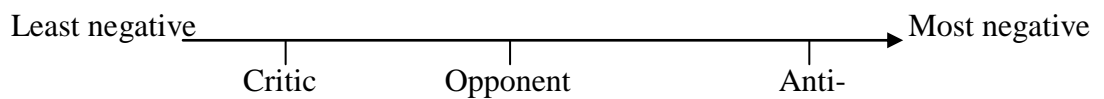


Figure 5.12 A Conceptual Scale of Relative Negativity of the English-Language Terms

In order to validate the above scale, a survey of the different implications of each of these terms has been conducted. Thirty five native English speakers were asked three questions²⁰³. These questions are shown below with the survey results following each question.

- 1) Which text below implies that the politician is more negative towards Syria?
(If you cannot decide, check the third answer)
 - A. The politician was a critic of Syria
 - B. The politician was an opponent of Syria
 - C. (I cannot decide)

²⁰² <http://www.merriam-webster.com>.

²⁰³ The survey can be found online:

<http://FreeOnlineSurveys.com/rendersurvey.asp?sid=tps9w2zy7jycide688275>.

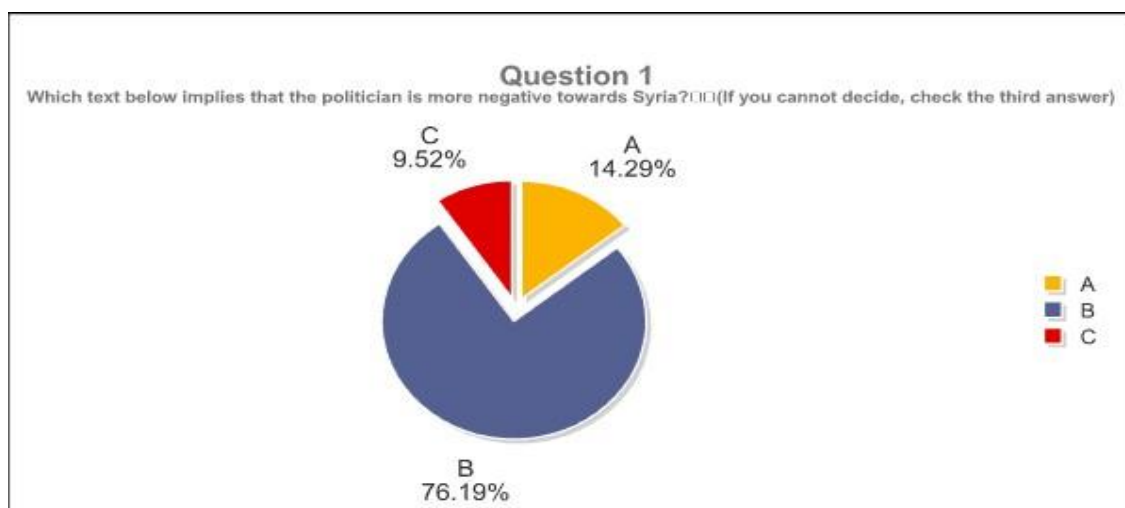


Figure 5.13 Results of Survey: Question 1

2) Again, which text below implies that the politician is more negative towards Syria?
(If you cannot decide, check the third answer)

- A. The politician was an opponent of Syria
- B. The politician was anti-Syrian
- C. (I cannot decide)

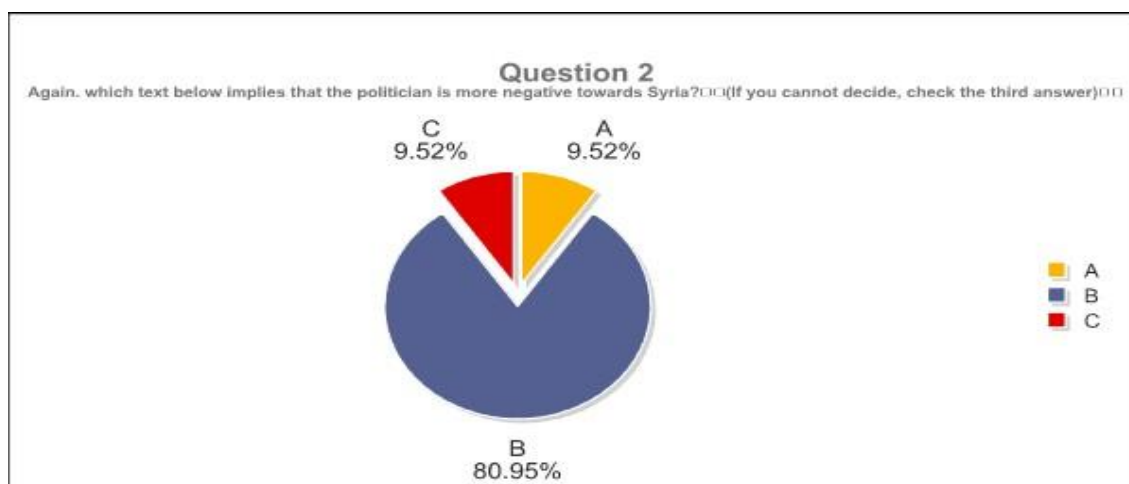


Figure 5.14 Results of Survey: Question 2

3) As before, which text below implies that the politician is more negative towards Syria? (If you cannot decide, check the third answer)

- A. The politician was a critic of Syria
- B. The politician was anti-Syrian
- C. (I cannot decide)

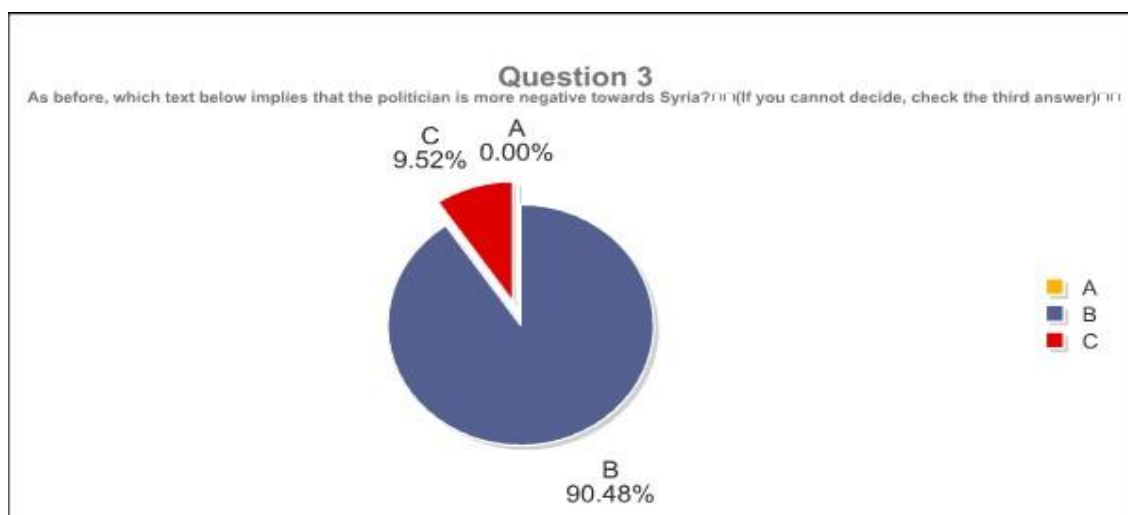


Figure 5.15 Results of Survey: Question 3

The results of question 1, Figure 5.13, show that “opponent of Syria” is perceived by native English speakers as much more negative than “critic of Syria”. The results of question 2, Figure 5.14, show, in turn, that “anti-Syria(n)” is much more negative than “opponent of Syria”. Finally, the results of question 3, Figure 5.15, show that “anti-Syria(n)” is perceived as being very much more negative than “critic of Syria”. The survey results thus validate the conceptual scale used in this analysis.

On the other hand, the Arabic news reports use five terms, *منتقد* (muntaqiD), *معارض* (mu‘aariD), *مناهض* (munaahiD), *مناوئ* (munaawi’) and *معادي* (mu‘aady). The definitions of the Arabic-language terms and their negative associations are more clear-cut and easier to place on a conceptual scale of relative negativity than the English-language ones. According to Lisaan Alarab, Arabic-Arabic dictionary²⁰⁴, (muntaqiD) conveys only to find fault with. Hence, muntaqiD is equivalent to the term “critic” in English. Lisaan Alarab also states that *معارض* (mu‘aariD), which is derived from the verb *عارض*, “object”, conveys one who shows mere objection or takes an opposite position in a debate. This term is usually translated into English as “opponent” rather than “objector”. However, unlike “opponent”, the term *معارض* (mu‘aariD) in Arabic does not imply hostility and thus does not span a range of possible negativity. Similarly, Lisaan Alarab and Mukhtaar Al-Sihaah, Arabic-Arabic dictionaries, state that *مناهض* (munaahiD) is derived from the verb *ناهض* which means *قاوم*, i.e. resist. An equivalent term to *مناهض* (munaahiD) in English is “resister”, which means “someone who actively

²⁰⁴ See <http://www.baheth.info/index.jsp>.

opposes the policies of a government”²⁰⁵. The difference between “oppose” and “resist” in Arabic is that the latter “implies an overt recognition of a hostile or threatening force”²⁰⁶. مناوئ (munaawi’) is derived from the verb ناوأ meaning قاوم و عادا, i.e. resist and antagonize. معادي (mu’aady) is derived from عدو which means العدوان و الظلم, i.e. he who shows aggression and prejudice against somebody or something. Although مناوئ (munaawi’) and معادي (mu’aady) may seem to mean the same, معادي (mu’aady) - by definition and as a native speaker of Arabic - implies more hostility and aggression than مناوئ (munaawi’). These two terms are usually translated into English as “anti-”. With the definitions above, the Arabic-language terms seem to entail different degrees of negativity. These are presented in a conceptual scale, Figure 5.16, where (muntaqiD), “critic”, implies the least negative association and (mu’aady) the most negative association²⁰⁷.

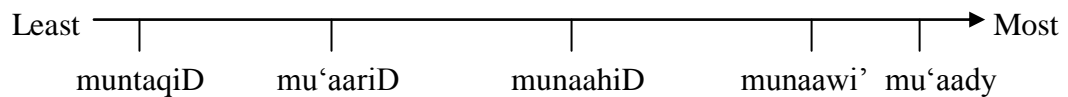


Figure 5.16 A Conceptual Scale of Relative Negativity of the Arabic-Language Terms

As shown in the scale above, the term معارض (mu’aariD) implies more negative association than منتقد (muntaqiD). The term مناهض (munaahiD) implies more negative association than both (muntaqiD) and (mu’aariD). Finally, the terms مناوئ (munaawi’) and معادي (mu’aady) imply the most negative associations. The most negative association is conveyed by (mu’aady), i.e. to show aggression and dislike²⁰⁸. It can be argued here that the terms “anti-Syria(n)” and (mu’aady li suryaa) may not exactly mean the same. The term “anti-Syria(n)” may imply a lesser degree of negativity than (mu’aady). This depends on the writer’s and news media’s intentions, which are not very easy to predict. However, it is suggested here that the term “anti-Syria(n)” is closer in meaning to (munaawi’) and (mu’aady) than to (munaahiD) in Arabic²⁰⁹.

²⁰⁵ A definition by Merriam Webster dictionary, <http://www.merriam-webster.com>.

²⁰⁶ A definition by Merriam Webster dictionary, <http://www.merriam-webster.com>.

²⁰⁷ Being a native speaker of Arabic, it was unnecessary to conduct a survey similar to the one carried out in English.

²⁰⁸ (mu’aady) is normally used with terms such as (mu’aady li al-Samyia), meaning “anti-Semitism”, or with terms such as “anti-American” or “anti-Nazi”.

²⁰⁹ The use of the term “anti-Syria(n)” is considered here to be closer in meaning to (munaawi’) than it is to (munaahiD) in the Arabic language.

Having introduced the terms used in the English and Arabic news reports to describe Lebanese opposing Syria and investigated the different implications associated with each of these terms, this section will then present the findings related to the use of these terms, first in the English-language news reports then in the Arabic-language ones.

5.3.2 The Analysis of “Critic of Syria(n)” in the English News Reports

This section studies the thematic structures and the informational roles of the least negative term used in the English news reports to describe Lebanese who express opposition to Syria and its policy in Lebanon. The analysis of the term “critic of Syria”²¹⁰ in main clauses in the English data focuses on²¹¹:

1. the use of “critic of Syria” in news headlines
2. Thematization of “critic” as New and Given information
3. The use of “critic” in marked thematic structures, i.e. whether it is a marked Theme or a Rheme in a marked thematic clause

Since the thematic focus falls on elements in Theme position and the informational focus falls on elements conveying New information, the thematization of “critic as New information in the data can be significant in this analysis. Similarly, the presentation of “critic” as a marked Theme conveying New information can be thematically and informationally significant in understanding the different ways this term is presented in the data. The analysis of Theme-Rheme and Given-New information shows that “critic of Syria(n)” in the English news reports is used 7 times as New information; twice in Theme position and five times in Rheme position. Table 5.18 presents the results found in the analysis of each group of the data.

| Critic of Syria(n) | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|---------------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 3 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G4 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 2 |
| G5 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 3 |
| Totals | 2 | 5 | 0 | 7 |

Table 5.18 Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of “Critic of Syria(n)” in the English News Reports

²¹⁰ “Critic” is also analysed in terms such as “critic of Syria’s”, “critic of Syrian” and “critics of Syria”.

²¹¹ Other terms are also analysed in the same way.

Table 5.18 shows that “critic of Syria” occurs three times in Rheme position as New information in the English news reports of group 1. There is no mention of “critic” in groups 2 and 3, as shown in Table 5.18. Table 5.18 also shows that “critic” occurs twice in Rheme position as New information in group 4 and twice in Theme position as New information in group 5. Examples of “critic of Syria(n)” in the English-language news reports are:

5.70. A stormy Lebanese Cabinet session Monday ended with a call for an international investigation into a string of high-profile attacks *on critics of Syrian involvement of Lebanon.*²¹² (CNN1, G1)

5.71. Walid Eido, a vocal critic of the Syrian regime, was killed in a in a seafront attack on Wednesday. (AFP, G5)

5.72. Druze leader Walid Jumblatt, an outspoken critic of Syria, blamed Eido's killing on Damascus. (CNN, G5)

Example 5.70 shows that “critics of Syrian involvement of Lebanon” is presented as New information in Rheme position. In example 5.71, “a vocal critic of the Syrian regime” conveys New information. This is because “critic of the Syrian regime” is not mentioned before in the AFP report and cannot be predicted. By the same token, the thematic element, “an outspoken critic of Syria”, in example 5.72, conveys New information. New information in Theme position is considered thematically and informationally significant, since New information usually occur in Rheme position of the clause. No examples of “critic of Syria(n)” in marked thematic clauses have been identified in the data. The analysis of the data shows that there is an informational focus on “critic of Syria(n)” both in Theme and Rheme positions in the English news reports.

The next section will present the analysis of (muntaqiD li suryaa), i.e. critic of Syria, and discuss the findings of this analysis in the Arabic news reports. This will help to compare the results found here with the ones in the Arabic reports. It will also help to investigate whether “critic” is presented differently in thematic structures of the English and Arabic news reports.

²¹² The use of italics in this study indicates elements revealing new information.

5.3.3 The Analysis of (MuntaqiD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports

The term (muntaqiD li suryaa), “critic of Syria”, is used three times in the Arabic news reports. It occurs only once in Theme position as New information, and twice in Rheme position as Given and New information. Table 5.18 presents the results of the analysis in the Arabic news reports.

| منتقد | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|---------------|----------|----------|----------|----------|
| G1 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 1 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 |
| G5 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 1 | 2 | 2 | 1 |

Table 5.18 Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of (MuntaqiD) in the Arabic News Reports

Table 5.18 shows that (muntaqiD) appears twice in Rheme position in group 1 of the Arabic data and once in Theme position in group 4 of the Arabic data. The occurrences of (muntaqiD), “critic of Syria”, in the Arabic news reports are presented below:

5.73. وتنفي سوريا التي يتهمها منتقدوها بالضلوع بمقتل الجميل أي صلة لها بمقتلها
Denies Syria, whose critics accuse of killing Gemayel, its connection with their killings. (Reuters2, G4)

5.74. في هذه الأثناء وبينما تبنت جماعة مجهولة تطلق على نفسها اسم "المناضلون من أجل وحدة وحرية المشرق" مسؤولية اغتيال تويني، نفت سوريا التهمة عنها بعد أن اتهمها الزعيم اللبناني وليد جنبلاط الذي كان من أشد منتقدي سوريا، والداعين إلى خروجها من لبنان.
Meanwhile, while adopted an unknown group calling itself Strugglers for the Unity and Freedom the Levant the responsibility of assassinating Tueni, Denied Syria the accusations of the Lebanese leader, Walid Junblat, who was a vocal critic of Syria and demanded its evacuation from Lebanon. (Al-Jazeera, G1)

5.75. انتهت جلسة عاصفة للحكومة اللبنانية الاثنين بدعوة إلى تحقيق دولي في سلسلة الاغتيالات التي طالت مجموعة من أبرز منتقدي التدخل السوري في لبنان.
Ended a stormy session of the Lebanese government on Monday by calling for an international investigation in the series of assassinations which targeted a group of most prominent critics of Syrian interference in Lebanon. (CNN1, G1)

New information is presented in Theme position of example 5.73, “denies Syria whose critics”. New information is also presented in Rheme position of the same example, “its connection”. Example 5.74 is a marked thematic clause because it has an Adjunct in Theme position, “while adopted an unknown group calling itself the Strugglers for the Unity and Freedom of the Levant”. The Adjunct in Theme position conveys New information, which is not predicted nor mentioned before in the Al-Jazeera report. New information is also conveyed in Rheme position of clause 5.74, “denied Syria the accusations of the Lebanese leader, Walid Junblat”. The “vocal critic of Syria” in clause 5.74 is presented as known information mainly because of the presence of the past tense, “was”. “Critic of Syria” in example 5.75 conveys New information in Rheme position. Given information is followed by New information in clause 5.75. The analysis of the above examples reveals that “critic of Syria” attracts more attention, thematically and informationally, in example 5.73, as it occurs in theme position as New information. It is also informationally and thematically less significant in the marked thematic clause 5.74.

It has been observed that the English news reports use “critic of Syria’s occupation to Lebanon”, “critic of Syrian involvement of Lebanon”, “critic of Syria’s interference in Lebanon” and “critic of the Syrian regime” more than “critic of Syria”. Similarly, the Arabic news reports use “critic of the Syrian interference in Lebanon” in example 5.75. The use of such terms, i.e. a critic of the Syrian policy or government, suggests less direct criticism of Syria as a country in its entirety. The criticism of Syria is directed towards its policy and interference in Lebanon. Although “critic” has been mentioned on a few occasions in the data, the analysis reveals that “critic of Syria” is presented differently in the English and Arabic news reports. There is more emphasis on “critic in the English reports than in the Arabic reports. “Critic of Syria(n)” is presented as New information in Theme and Rheme positions in the English news reports, while it is mostly presented as Given information in Rheme positions in the Arabic ones. The relevance of this analysis will be further investigated in relation to the analysis of the other terms used in the data.

Having analysed “critic of Syria” in the selected data, the next section will analyse the second least negative term, namely “opponent” of Syria in the English news reports.

5.3.4 The Analysis of “Opponent of Syria(n)” in the English News Reports

The second least negative term used to describe Lebanese opposing Syria and the Syrian interference in Lebanon is “opponent”. Like the term “critic”, “opponent of Syria(n)” is investigated in Theme-Rheme structures and in terms of Given-New information. “Opponent of Syria(n)” in Theme position as New information and in marked thematic clauses is particularly significant in the analysis of the data, as discussed in the previous sections. The analysis of the data reveals that the English-language news reports use “opponent of Syria” four times, as illustrated in the examples below:

5.76. Syrian troops only withdrew from Lebanese territory after the assassination of Hariri, *a long-time opponent of Syria*. (Syria-News, G3)

5.77. With Beirut crowds gathering, *angry slogans against Syria’s Lebanese allies rang out...as tens of thousands of mourners gathered for the funeral of the latest Damascus opponent* to be murdered. (NBN, G4)

5.78. Lebanese troops, backed by armoured vehicles, were out in force across the capital for the funeral of Industry Minister Pierre Gemayel, the *sixth outspoken opponent of Syria to be assassinated in the past two years*. (AFP1, G4)

5.79. Lebanon’s government *believes Syria is embarking on what Druze Cabinet Minister Marwan Hamadeh called a “physical liquidation” campaign aimed at eliminating opponents of Syria*. (Syria-News, G5)

New information in the above examples is presented in italics. The analysis shows that “opponent of Syria” is presented as New information in Rheme positions in examples 5.76, 5.77, 5.78 and 5.79. This information is not mentioned before in the above news reports and cannot be predicted. The Adjunct, “with Beirut gathering”, in example 5.77, functions as a fronted Theme and hence render this clause as a marked thematic one. The marked Theme in example 5.77 conveys old information, which has been already mentioned in the report. New information or the informational focus in the thematic marked clause (5.77) is presented by the rhematic elements, “latest Damascus opponent”. The above examples show that the English-language news reports do not thematize “opponent of Syria”. They use “opponent of Syria”, or “Damascus opponent”, rather than “opponent of the Syrian government/influence/interference in

Lebanon”. This suggests a criticism of Syria as a whole rather than of its policy in Lebanon. The thematic and informational analysis of “opponent of Syria” in the selected English news reports is presented in Table 5.20. Table 5.20 presents a quantitative analysis of “opponent” in the five groups of the data. “Opponent” is also presented as Given and New information in Table 5.20.

| Opponent | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|-----------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G4 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 2 |
| G5 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 |
| Totals | 0 | 4 | 0 | 4 |

Table 5.20 Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of “Opponent” in the English News Reports

The next section will present the analysis of the second least negative term in Arabic, namely معارض لسوريا (mu‘aariD li suryaa) and discuss the findings in the Arabic-Language news reports.

5.3.5 The Analysis of (Mu‘aariD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports

As discussed in section 5.3.1, (mu‘aariD), which is usually translated as “opponent”, conveys someone who shows mere objection. The results of the thematic analysis of (mu‘aariD li suryaa) indicate that this term is more frequently used in Rheme position in the Arabic-language news reports than in Theme positions. The results also show that (mu‘aariD li suryaa) is presented mostly as Given information in Theme and Rheme positions of the Arabic clauses. The results of analysing (mu‘aariD li suryaa) as Theme-Rheme and in terms of Given-New information in each of the five groups in the Arabic-language news reports are presented in Table 5.21 below.

| Mu‘aariD | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|-----------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 1 | 4 | 3 | 2 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 |
| G4 | 4 | 3 | 5 | 2 |
| G5 | 3 | 6 | 7 | 2 |
| Totals | 9 | 13 | 15 | 7 |

Table 5.21 Results of Thematic and Informational Analysis of (Mu‘aariD) in the Arabic News Reports

The results in Table 5.21 show that (mu‘aariD li suryaa) functions as Theme, or part of the Theme, in 9 Arabic clauses and as Rheme, or part of the Rheme, in 13 Arabic clauses in the Arabic news reports. The results in Table 5.21 also show (mu‘aariD li suryaa) is presented as Given information in fifteen main clauses and as New information in seven main clauses. In total, (mu‘aariD li suryaa) is mentioned in 22 main clauses in the selected news reports mostly in Rheme positions and as Given information. A further analysis of the Arabic data shows that (mu‘aariD) in Theme positions is presented mostly as known information as shown in the examples below:

5.80. قتل النائب و الصحافي اللبناني جبران تويني المعارض لسوريا الاثنين في انفجار سيارة مفخخة شرق بيروت.

Was killed the Lebanese Member of Parliament and journalist, Gibran Tueni, an opponent of Syria, on Monday in car bomb east Beirut. (AFP2, G1)

5.81. وقال جنبلاط و هو أبرز الزعماء المعارضين لسوريا يوم الأربعاء إن مقتل الجميل مؤثر على استئناف الاغتيالات السياسية.

Said Junblat, a prominent opponent of Syria, on Wednesday that killing Gemayel is an indication of continuous political assassinations. (Reuters1, G4)

5.82. و دعا الحلفاء السياسيون لبيار الجميل الذي ينتمي إلى الغالبية البرلمانية المعارضة لسوريا، الأربعاء اللبنانيين من العاصمة إلى التجمع بكثافة الخميس في وسط بيروت للمشاركة في مراسم تشييعه Called the political allies of Pierre Gemayel, who belong to the majority of Parliament who are opponents of Syria, on Wednesday the Lebanese from the capital to gather in the heart of Beirut on Thursday to participate in his funeral ceremonies. (Alarab, G4)

5.83. مقتل عشرة بينهم نائب معارض لسوريا في انفجار ببيروت.

Killing of ten including an opponent-of-Syria MP in a Beirut explosion.

(Reuters' headline, G5)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. (Mu‘aariD li suryaa) is presented as known information in Theme positions in examples 5.80, 5.81 and 5.82. In example 5.83, (mu‘aariD li suryaa) occurs in Theme position in the Reuters Arabic headline. The thematic elements of the headline, in example 5.83, convey New information - Information in news headlines is usually unpredicted, since it comes first

in the report. (Mu'aariD li suryaa) is used only once in news headline, example 5.83, of the selected Arabic data.

(Mu'aariD li suryaa) also occurs in seven marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports. These structures are presented below:

5.83. مقتل عشرة بينهم نائب معارض لسوريا في انفجار ببيروت.
Killing of ten including an **opponent-of-Syria** MP in a Beirut explosion.

(Reuters1, G5)

5.84. موقف الإدارة الأمريكية يأتي في أعقاب زيارة لمسؤولين لبنانيين معارضين للتدخل السوري في لبنان.
The stand of the US administration comes after the visit of Lebanese officials who are **opponent of the Syrian interference in Lebanon.**

(CNN, G3)

5.85. وكان بيير الجميل العضو في الأكثرية النيابية المعارضة لسوريا قد اغتيل يوم الثلاثاء بضاحية بيروت الشمالية.

(Kaana) Pierre Gemayel, a member of the majority of the Parliament who are **opponents of Syria,** assassinated on Tuesday in north Beirut.

(Al-Jazeera, G4)

5.86 وكان <عيدو> معارضاً صريحاً للنفوذ السوري في لبنان.
(Kaana) <Eido> an outspoken opponent of Syria's influence in Lebanon.

(Reuters1, G5)

5.87. أما النائب وليد جنبلاط وهو من قيادات فريق 14 مارس/ آذار المعارض لسورية فقال أن "النظام السوري هو المسؤول عن الجريمة".

But MP Walid Junblat, a leader of 14 March movement and an **opponent of Syria,** had said that "the Syrian regime is responsible for the crime".

(BBC Arabic, G4)

5.88. وعيدو الذي ينتمي إلى الكتلة النيابية التي يرأسها سعد الحريري هو النائب الثالث المعارض لسوريا الذي يتعرض للاغتيال منذ ديسمبر / كانون الأول من عام 2005.

Eido, who belongs to the Parliament lead by Saad Hariri, is the third **opponent of Syria** to be assassinated since December 2005.

(BBC Arabic, G5)

5.89. و النائب السني وليد عيدو هو سابع شخصية معارضة لسوريا يغتال منذ فبراير شباط عام 2005.
The Sunni MP, Walid Eido, is the seventh opponent of Syria to be assassinated since February 2005.

(Reuters2, G2)

Clause 5.83, which is the news headline of Reuters' Arabic report, is an example of nominalization as Thematization. The nominal phrase, "killing of ten including an opponent-of-Syria MP", in example 5.83, functions as a marked Theme and presents New information. It is the only example in the Arabic data where (mu'aariD li suryaa), "opponent of Syria", is highlighted in Theme position as New information. Clause 5.84 is also thematically marked. The nominal phrase, "the stand of the US administration" is a fronted Subject and a marked Theme in Arabic. Given information is presented in Theme position in clause 5.84, whereas New information is presented by the Rheme, "comes after the visit of Lebanese officials who are opponent of the Syrian interference in Lebanon". Clauses 5.85 and 5.86 have fronted Subjects, "Eido" and "Gemayel" respectively, which are preceded by the empty verb (kaana), meaning "was". The empty verb (kaana) in Arabic presents information in Rheme position, "opponent of Syria" as known information and an old event. "Opponent of Syria(n)" in Theme position of example 5.87 is foregrounded and presented as background information. The thematic markedness in clause 5.87 presents the thematic elements as predicted information and the rhematic elements as New information. Clauses 5.88 and 5.89 have fronted Subjects, "Eido, who belongs to the Parliament lead by Saad Hariri" and "The Sunni MP, Walid Eido", respectively, in Theme positions. The marked Themes, in clauses 5.88 and 5.89 are old information and the rhematic elements, "opponent of Syria(n)", are New information, on which the informational focus falls.

The results of analysing "opponent of Syria(n)" in marked thematic structures in the English- and Arabic-language news reports are presented in Table 5.22. Table 5.22 shows the numbers of "opponent of Syria" as marked Themes and as Rhemes, or part of the Rheme, of marked thematic structures. The presentation of "opponent" as Given and New information in marked thematic structures is also presented in Table 5.22.

| Marked Thematic Structures | Marked Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| The Arabic news reports | 3 | 4 | 3 | 4 |
| The English news reports | 0 | 1 | 0 | 1 |

Table 5.22 "Opponent" in Marked Thematic Structures in the Data

Table 5.22 shows that the Arabic-language news reports use "opponent" as marked Themes in three clauses and in Rheme positions of four marked thematic clauses. "Opponent" is presented as Given and New information in the Arabic marked thematic structures. The English-language news reports use "opponent" in Rheme position of

one marked thematic clause and present it as New information. The results of this analysis will be compared with those presented in the previous and following sections.

To sum up, the English-language news reports use the term “opponent of Syria” less frequently than the Arabic-language news reports. “Opponent of Syria(n)” is presented as New information in Rheme positions of unmarked and marked thematic structures in the English news reports, whereas it is mostly presented as Given information in unmarked and marked thematic structures in the Arabic reports. In addition, the Arabic news reports tend to present “opponent of Syria(n)” as Given information in Rheme positions. The analysis suggests that, even though “opponent” is more frequently used in the Arabic reports than in the English ones, there is less informational and thematic focus on this term in the Arabic data.

Having analysed “opponent of Syria(n)” in the English- and Arabic-language news reports, the next section will study the Arabic term (munaahiD li suryaa), which implies more negativity towards Syria.

5.3.6. The Analysis of (MunaahiD Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports

Section 5.3.1 suggested that the term (munaahiD li suryaa), “resister”, implies by definition less negative association than (munaawi’ li suryaa) and (mu’aady li suryaa) and more negative association than (muntaqiD li suryaa) and (mu’aariD li suryaa). In the selected news reports, (munaahiD li suryaa) appears in three Arabic news headlines as shown in the following examples.

5.90. مناهضون لسوريا بشيعون نائبا لبنانيا ويتهمون دمشق.

MunaahiDwn²¹³ li suryaa bid farewell to Lebanese MP, accuse Damascus.

(Reuters2, G5)

5.91. تشبيع النائب عيدو ببيروت وسط هتافات مناهضة لسوريا.

Funeral of MP Eido in Beirut among slogans munaahiDa li suryaa²¹⁴.

(Reuters1, G5)

5.92. النائب وليد عيدو شيع في مأتم شعبي على وقع هتافات مناهضة لسوريا.

²¹³ (MunaahiDwn) is the plural of (munaahiD) in Arabic.

²¹⁴ The suffix (a) at the end of (munaahiDa) denotes plurality for the feminine gender in Arabic.

*MP Walid Eido is bidden farewell in public funeral among slogans **munaahiDa li suryaa**.* (AFP, G5)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. The analysis of these examples shows that (munaahiDwn li suryaa) functions as the Theme in example 5.90 and (munaahiDa li suryaa) functions as part of the Rhemes in examples 5.91 and 5.92. (MunaahiDwn and munaahiDa li suryaa) in the above three news headlines convey New information which cannot be predicted nor mentioned before in these reports. Arabic news headlines are usually presented as nominal clauses in which the Subject precedes the verb. They are considered here as marked thematic structures (see section 4.4.3). The Theme, “munaahiDwn li suryaa”, in Reuters2 Arabic news headline, example 5.90, is a marked Theme revealing New information, hence it is both thematically and informationally marked.

In addition to news headlines, (munaahiD li suryaa) is used in marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports. The analysis of these structures shows that (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented mostly as Given information in Rheme positions. Examples of (munaahiD li suryaa) in marked thematic clauses are presented below:

5.93. *وكان عيدو (64 عاما) عضوا في تكتل الأغلبية البرلمانية المناهض لسوريا.*
(Kaana) Eido (64 years old) a member of the majority of parliament who are **munaahiD li suryaa**. (Reuters1, G5)

5.94. *وجبران تويني معروف بمواقفه المناهضة لسوريا.*
Gibran Tueni known for his stands, which are **munaahiDa li suryaa**. (CNN1, G5)

مناهض لسوريا function as part of the Rheme in example 5.93, which is a nominal clause and a marked thematic structure in Arabic. *مناهض لسوريا* in example 5.93 is presented as old and predicted information. This information is also mentioned before in a previous clause in Reuters1 Arabic news report, namely “Eido was an outspoken opponent of Syria’s influence in Lebanon”. In example 5.94, which is also a marked thematic structure in Arabic, the Theme and Rheme convey Given information. The marked fronted Subject, “Gibran Tueni”, in example 5.94, is mentioned before in the CNN Arabic news report. Similarly, the Rheme, “known for his stands, which are munaahiDa li suryaa”, in example 5.94 is referred to in a previous clause in the CNN report, namely “prominent critics of Syria’s interference in Lebanon”. Information in

Theme and Rheme positions is presented as old, predicted and background information in the latter example. The analysis of (munaahiD li suryaa) in the other marked thematic structures in the Arabic reports show similar results to the ones discussed in the examples above. The results of Theme-Rheme analysis and Given-New information of (munaahiD li suryaa) in marked thematic structures in the Arabic data are presented in Table 5.23.

| MunaahiD li suryaa | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|---------------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 3 | 2 | 1 |
| G4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G5 | 1 | 6 | 4 | 3 |
| Totals | 1 | 9 | 6 | 4 |

Table 5.23 Results of Analysing (MunaahiD Li Suryaa) in Marked Thematic Structures in the Arabic Data

The results in Table 5.23 show that (munaahiD li suryaa), i.e. “resister or showing resistance to Syria”, is used in ten marked thematic structures in the selected Arabic-language news reports. (MunaahiD li suryaa) is used only once as a marked Theme conveying New information (see example 5.90 and Table 5.23, group 5). (MunaahiD li suryaa) is also used in Rheme positions of nine marked thematic clauses. The results of the informational analysis, in Table 5.23, show that (munaahiD) is presented as Given information in six marked thematic structures and as New information in four marked thematic structures. Thus, (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented mostly as Given information in Rheme positions of marked thematic structures in the Arabic data. The results suggest that there is less thematic and informational emphasis on (munaahiD li suryaa) in marked thematic structures in the Arabic data.

The analysis of (munaahiD li suryaa) in unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic data shows slightly different results. As in the marked thematic structures, (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented more often in Rheme position than in Theme position of unmarked thematic clauses. However, (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented more as New information than as Given information. The results of the thematic and informational analysis of this term in the unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic data are presented in the tables below:

| MunaahiD | Theme | Rheme |
|-----------------|--------------|--------------|
| G1 | 0 | 1 |
| G2 | 1 | 3 |
| G3 | 0 | 2 |
| G4 | 3 | 4 |
| G5 | 4 | 6 |
| Totals | 8 | 16 |

Table 5.24 Results of Thematic Analysis of (MunaahiD) in Unmarked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports

| MunaahiD | Theme | | Rheme | |
|-----------------|--------------|------------|--------------|------------|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Arabic Data | 2 | 6 | 6 | 9 |

Table 5.25 Results of Informational Analysis of (MunaahiD) in Unmarked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports

Table 5.24 presents an account of (munaahiD li suryaa) in Theme and Rheme positions of unmarked thematic structures in each group of the Arabic data. Table 5.25 presents an informational account of (munaahiD li suryaa) in Theme and Rheme positions of unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic data. The results in Table 5.24 show that (munaahiD li suryaa) is thematized in eight unmarked thematic clauses and rhematized in 16 other clauses. All five groups in the data show a tendency towards rhematizing (munaahiD li suryaa). The results in Table 5.25 show that (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented as Given information in eight unmarked thematic clauses and as New information in 15 unmarked thematic ones. More specifically, (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented twice as Given information and six times as New information in Theme position of unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic data (see Table 5.25). Table 5.25 also shows that (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented six times as Given information and 9 times as New information in Rheme position of unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic data. Examples of (munaahiD li suryaa) in Rheme position of unmarked Arabic structures are presented below:

5.95. وقال بوش في بيان إن العملية تندرج ضمن سلسلة اعتداءات استهدفت شخصيات مناهضة لسوريا في لبنان منذ أكتوبر/تشرين الأول 2004.

Said Bush in a statement that the operation is one of a series of attacks which targeted figures **munaahiDa li suryaa** in Lebanon since October 2004.

(Al-Jazeera, G5)

- 5.96. *وهدد الأمين العام لحزب الله حسن نصر الله الثلاثاء باللجوء إلى الشارع في حال استمرت الغالبية النيابية المناهضة لسوريا في رفض تشكيل حكومة وحدة وطنية.*
*Threatened the Hezbollah leader, Hassan Nasrallah, on Tuesday street demonstrations if the Parliament majority which are **munaahiDa li suryaa** continued to refuse the formation of national unity government. (AFP1, G3)*

(MunaahiDa li suryaa) functions as part of the Rheme in example 5.95. It is presented as old information because (munaahiD) is mentioned before in Al-Jazeera Arabic report. The Theme, “threatened” and the Rheme in example 5.96 are presented as New information. (MunaahiDa li suryaa) in example 5.96 is part of the rhematic elements which are presented as unknown information.

To sum up, the results of this analysis show that (munaahiD li suryaa) is used more often in Rheme position than in Theme position of marked and unmarked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports. Moreover, (munaahiD li suryaa) is presented more often as New information in Theme and Rheme positions than as Given information in the Arabic data. The results suggest (munaahiD li suryaa) receives thematic and informational focus in the Arabic-language news reports. The results also suggest that there is more emphasis on this term in the Arabic news reports than on the previous Arabic-language terms, i.e. “critic of Syria” and “opponent of Syria”.

The next section will study “anti-Syria”, a term which implies strong negative feelings towards Syria, in the selected English-language news reports.

5.3.7 The Analysis of “Anti-Syria(n)” in the English News reports

Whether in Theme or Rheme positions, elements in news headlines usually convey New information, since New information has to be introduced first. In the English-language news reports, “anti-Syria(n)” is highlighted as relaying New information in eleven English news headlines. “Anti-Syria(n)” is used three times in Theme position, examples 5.97, 5.98 and 5.99 and seven times in Rheme position, example 5.100, of the English news headlines.

- 5.97. ***Anti-Syrian MP** slain in Beirut car bombing.* (AFP2, G1)

- 5.98. ***Anti-Syrian MP** mourned in Lebanon.* (BBC, G5)

5.99. *Anti-Syrians bury slain Lebanese MP, blame Damascus.* (Reuters2, G5)

5.100. *Lebanon blast kills anti-Syrian lawmaker.* (Al-Jazeera, G1)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. The use of the verb “slain” as New information in news headlines in examples 5.97 and 5.99 implies a brutal ending to life of the Lebanese MP. The thematization of “anti-Syria” as new information also suggests a link between Syria and the brutal murder of Tueni. The analysis of the English news headlines suggests a strong emphasis on “anti-Syria(n)” as New information in Theme and Rheme positions.

In addition to news headlines, “anti-Syria(n)” is mentioned in the English news reports and analysed in terms of Theme-Rheme structures and Given-New information. The analysis shows that “anti-Syria(n)” is mostly presented in Rheme position and as New information in these reports. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.26.

| Anti-Syria(n) | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|----------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 9 | 19 | 7 | 21 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 |
| G4 | 10 | 12 | 3 | 19 |
| G5 | 5 | 24 | 3 | 26 |
| Totals | 27 | 55 | 13 | 69 |

Table 5.26 Results of Analysing “Anti-Syria(n)” in the English News Reports

The results in Table 5.26 show that “anti-Syria(n)” is mentioned eighty two times in the English news reports. It occurs in Theme position of twenty-seven main clauses and in Rheme position of 55 main clauses in the selected English reports. The results also show that the English-language news reports use “anti-Syria(n)” as Given information in 13 main clauses and as New information in sixty-nine main clauses. A further analysis of “anti-Syria(n)” in Theme position shows that nineteen main clauses present “anti-Syria(n)” as New information in Theme position and six main clauses present it as Given information in Theme position. The results of analysing “anti-Syria(n)” in terms of Given and New information in Theme position are presented Table 5.27.

| Anti-Syria(n) | Theme + New | Theme + Given |
|----------------------|--------------------|----------------------|
| G1 | 5 | 4 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 3 | 0 |
| G4 | 8 | 2 |
| G5 | 5 | 0 |
| Totals | 21 | 6 |

Table 5.27 Results of Informational Analysis of “Anti-Syria” in Theme Position in the English News Reports

Examples of “anti-Syria(n)” in Theme position in the English-language news reports are:

5.101. Anti-Syrian politicians had dismissed calls for a national unity government.

(*Alarab*, G3)

5.102. A prominent Lebanese anti-Syrian MP and journalist, Gibran Tueni, has been killed in a massive car bomb attack in Beirut.

(BBC, G1)

“Anti-Syrian politicians” functions as the Theme and conveys unknown information in example 5.101. “Anti-Syrian politicians” is only mentioned once in the *Alarab* English report, example 5.101. Thus, it is not mentioned before and cannot be predicted. “Anti-Syrian MP” is presented as old information in Theme position in example 5.102. The thematic elements, “a prominent Lebanese anti-Syrian MP and journalist”, function as pre-modifiers to “Gibran Tueni”, who is the Theme proper in example 5.102. This implies that “anti-Syrian” in example 5.102 is presented as Given information. In addition, “anti-Syrian” in example 5.102 is mentioned before in the BBC headline. The analysis of “anti-Syria(n)” shows that the selected English-language news reports have a tendency towards using the term “anti-Syria(n)” as New information, especially in Theme position.

“Anti-Syria(n)” is also analysed in marked thematic structures in the English news reports. These structures are presented in examples 5.103, 5.104, 5.105 and 5.106.

5.103. Since Hariri’s death, at least 13 attacks have targeted anti-Syrian figures

(*Alarab*, G1)

5.104. Since the killing of Mr Hariri, Christian and anti-Syrian areas have been the target of at least 14 blasts.

(BBC, G1)

5.105. After the resignation last week of another coalition member, Mr Eido’s death leaves the *anti-Syrian bloc* with a slim majority of just three members in parliament. (BBC, G5)

5.106. Since Hariri’s February 2005 killing, several other **anti-Syrian Lebanese politicians** have been assassinated. (CNN, G5)

The fronted Adjuncts in the above examples, “since Hariri’s death”, since the killing of Mr Hariri”, “after the resignation last week of another coalition member” and “Since Hariri’s February 2005 killing”, function as marked Themes. The marked Themes are presented as Given information because they are mentioned before in the report and can be predicted from previous contexts. “Anti-Syrian” functions as part of the rhematic elements of the marked thematic structures in the above examples. It is presented as New information in examples 5.103, 5.104 and 5.105. The marked Themes in these examples set the scene as Given information and present New information in Rheme position. The thematic marked clause in 5.106 presents background information, which is predicted in the news. The marked thematic structure reveals Given information in Theme and Rheme positions. “Anti-Syria(n)”, in the above examples, is not used as marked Themes but in Rheme positions of marked thematic structures. It is presented as New information, except in clause 5.106. The results of the analysis of “anti-Syria(n)” in marked thematic structures in the English-language news reports are presented in Table 5.28.

| Anti-Syria(n) | Theme | Rheme | Given | New |
|----------------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| G1 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 2 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G5 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 1 |
| Totals | 0 | 4 | 1 | 3 |

Table 5.28 Results of Analysing “Anti-Syria(n)” in Marked Thematic Structures in the English-Language News Reports

The analysis of “anti-Syria(n)” in marked thematic structures shows that it is presented mostly in Rheme position and as New information. The analysis suggests that there is an informational and thematic focus on “anti-Syrian” in marked and unmarked thematic structures in the English news reports.

The next section will discuss the analysis of (munaawi') and (mu'aady), i.e. "anti-Syria(n)", in the Arabic-language news reports and will compare the results found in the English data with those in the Arabic one.

5.3.8 The Analysis of (Mu'aady Li Suryaa) and (Munaawi' Li Suryaa) in the Arabic News Reports

Section 5.3.1 discussed that the Arabic nominal terms, معادي (mu'aady) and مناوي (munaawi'), imply more negative association than (munaahiD), (mu'aariD) and (muntaqiD) in Arabic. (Mu'aady), which means "to be hostile to", infers by definition the most negative feelings towards someone or something. It is suggested here that these two Arabic-language terms are close in meaning to "anti-"²¹⁵ in the English news reports. Thus, their analysis in the Arabic news reports will be compared later to the analysis conducted in section 5.3.7.

The term معادي لسوريا (mu'aady li suryaa) is used only twice in the Arabic-language news reports. These two instances are presented in examples 5.107 and 5.108.

5.107. ذكر مصور وكالة فرانس برس أن النائب المسيحي اللبناني المعادي لسوريا جبران تويني رئيس مجلس إدارة صحيفة النهار اللبنانية قتل الاثنين في اعتداء بسيارة مفخخة في ضاحية المكلس شرق بيروت.

Mentioned the photographer of France Press Agency that Gibran Tueni, the Christian Lebanese **anti-Syria** MP and the chief editor of the Lebanese Annahar newspaper, *was killed on Monday in a car bomb attack in Mukalas suburb, east of Beirut.* (AFP1, G1)

5.108. ورد المتظاهرون هتافات معادية لسوريا التي تتهمها الاكثرية النيابية بالضلوع في اغتيال الجميل²¹⁶
Chanted the protesters anti-Syria slogans, which the majority of Parliament accuse [Syria] of being behind Gemayel's assassination. (AFP1, G4)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. Although (mu'aady li suryaa) is only mentioned once in the AFP Arabic report of Group1, example 5.107, it is presented as Given information in Rheme position. "The Christian Lebanese anti-Syria MP and the chief editor of the Lebanese Annahar newspaper" functions as a relative clause which modifies "Gibran Tueni" in Rheme position in example 5.107. New

²¹⁵ This is specifically when anti- is used to pre-modify a nation or a nationality.

²¹⁶ AFP1 Arabic news report, Group 4 on Gemayel's assassination.

information in the latter example is presented by the rhematic elements “was killed on Monday in a car bomb attack in Mukalas suburb, east of Beirut”. In example 5.108, “anti-Syria slogans” functions as the Rheme proper and is presented as New information. No marked thematic clauses are identified regarding the use of (mu‘aady li suryaa) in the Arabic-language news reports.

While (mu‘aady li suryaa) is mentioned twice in the Arabic news reports, (munaawi’ li suryaa) is mentioned four times, as shown in examples 5.109, 5.110, 5.111 and 5.112.

5.109. ومنذ ذلك الحين وقع 14 انفجارا على الأقل ضد أهداف مسيحية ومناوئة لسوريا
Since then happened 14 explosions at least against Christian and anti-Syria targets.
(BBC Arabic, G1)

5.110. ودعا رئيس الوزراء اللبناني فؤاد السنيورة إلى الجلسة الطارئة عقب اغتيال الإعلامي ونائب البرلمان المناوئ لسوريا، جبران تويني، الاثنين بانفجار سيارة في شرق بيروت
Called the Lebanese PM, Fuad Siniora, for the urgent session after the assassination of the journalist and the anti-Syria MP, Gibran Tueni, on Monday in a car explosion in east Beirut.
(CNN1, G1)

5.111. وعلت الهتافات المؤيدة له والمناوئة لسورية من الحشد
Were chanted Anti-Syria slogans by the crowd.
(BBC Arabic, G4)

5.112. وقال وزير الاتصالات اللبناني مروان حماده إن اغتيال عيدو جزء من التصفية الجسدية التي تتعرض لها الأغلبية البرلمانية المناوئة لسوريا على يد نظامها
Said the Lebanese Minister of Communication, Marwan Hamaday, that the assassination of Eido is part of the physical liquidation targeting the anti-Syria majority of Parliament on the hands of its [Syrian] regime
(BBC Arabic, G5)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. Example 5.109 is the final clause in the BBC report and is meant as background information. The fronted Adjunct, “and since then”, which is the marked Theme in example 5.109, is predicted information. It sets the scene for elements in Rheme position. The informational focus in the marked thematic structure, in example 5.109, falls on the Rheme proper, “14 explosions”, rather than on “Christian and anti-Syria targets”. (Munaawi’ li suryaa) in example 5.109 is presented as Given information, which the readers are expected to

know about. Similarly, (munaawi' li suryaa), in examples 5.110 and 5.112, is presented as Given information in Rheme position. New information in example 5.110 is presented by the Theme, “the Lebanese PM, Fuad Siniora, called”, while Given information is presented by the Rheme proper “the urgent session”, which is mentioned before in the CNN report. The informational focus in example 5.112 falls on the rhematic elements, “part of the physical liquidation targeting”, rather than “the anti-Syria majority of Parliament”. In example 5.111, (munaawi' li suryaa) is presented as New information in Theme position. “Anti-Syria slogans”, which is the Theme proper, is neither predicted nor mentioned before in the BBC Arabic report.

The results of analysing (mu'aady li suryaa) and (munaawi' li suryaa) in the Arabic-language news reports are presented in Tables 5.29 and 5.30 below:

| Mu'aady | Theme | | Rheme | |
|---------------|----------|----------|----------|----------|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| G1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| G4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 |
| G5 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 |

Table 5.29 Results of Analysing (Mu'aady) in the Arabic News Reports

| Munaawi' | Theme | | Rheme | |
|---------------|----------|----------|----------|----------|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| G1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| G3 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 0 |
| G4 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 |
| G5 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| Totals | 0 | 1 | 3 | 0 |

Table 5.30 Results of Analysing (Munaawi') in the Arabic News Reports

The above tables show that (mu'aady li suryaa) and (munaawi' li suryaa) are presented mostly in Rheme position and as Given information. There is only one instance in the Arabic data where (munaawi' li suryaa) is presented as New information in Theme position (see example 5.111). Generally speaking, the Arabic-language news reports tend to avoid using very strong negative terms to describe the Syria-Lebanon relationship. The results also suggest that there is a tendency to place little thematic and informational emphasis on these terms. Although (mu'aady li suryaa) and (munaawi' li

suryaa) are rarely used in the Arabic news reports, their analysis is considered significant especially when compared to the other English- and Arabic-language terms as will be discussed in the next section.

5.3.9. Concluding Remarks

This section has investigated the different linguistic variations regarding the use of the English-language and Arabic-language terms opposing Syria and its policy in Lebanon in Theme-Rheme structures and as Given and New information. The analysis focuses on three main criteria, news headlines, thematization of Given and New information and marked thematic structures. The analysis of these terms in news headlines shows no mention of “critic of Syria” and “opponent of Syria(n)” in the English-language news reports. “Anti-Syria” is mentioned in eleven English-language news headlines. معارض (mu‘aariD), “opponent”, is mentioned twice in the Arabic news headlines: in Reuters Arabic news headline of group 5 and in the BBC Arabic headline of group 1. مناهض (munaahiD li Suryaa) is mentioned in three Arabic news headlines. There is no mention of (munaawi’) or (mu‘aady) in news headlines in the Arabic-language news reports. A quantitative analysis of these terms in news headlines is presented in Table 5.31.

| Terms | News Headlines |
|------------|----------------|
| critic | 0 |
| opponent | 0 |
| anti-Syria | 11 |
| muntaqiD | 0 |
| mu‘aariD | 2 |
| munaahiD | 3 |
| munaawi’ | 0 |
| mu‘aady | 0 |

Table 5.31 Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in News Headlines

Table 5.30 shows that the English-language news reports use terms opposing Syria in eleven headlines, whereas the Arabic-language news reports use them in four news headlines. In other words, the English-language news reports use these terms in news headlines more often than the Arabic-language news reports. Since news headlines are usually presented as New information, the results of this analysis suggest that there is more informational focus on the terms opposing Syria in the English-language news headlines than in the Arabic-language ones.

The analysis of the second criterion shows that the English-language news reports use “critic of Syria” twice and “anti-Syria” 22 times as New information in Theme position. The analysis of the Arabic-language news reports shows that (mu‘aariD), i.e. “opponent”, is presented four times as New information in Theme position. (MunaahiD), i.e. “resister”, is presented as New information in Theme position of seven main clauses. (Munaawi’) is presented once as New information in Theme position. The results of the analysis of these terms in Theme position in the selected news reports are presented in Tables 5.32 and 5.33.

| Terms | Theme+New | Theme+Given |
|---------------|------------------|--------------------|
| critic | 2 | 0 |
| opponent | 0 | 0 |
| anti-Syria | 21 | 6 |
| Totals | 23 | 6 |

Table 5.32 Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Theme Positions in the English News Reports

| Terms | Theme+New | Theme+Given |
|---------------|------------------|--------------------|
| muntaqiD | 1 | 0 |
| mu‘aariD | 4 | 5 |
| munaahiD | 7 | 2 |
| munaawi’ | 1 | 0 |
| mu‘aady | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 13 | 7 |

Table 5.33 Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Theme Positions in the Arabic News Reports

The results in Table 5.32 show that “critic”, “opponent” and “anti-Syria” are used in 23 main English clauses as New information in Theme position and in six main English clauses as Given information in Theme position. The results in Table 5.33 show that (muntaqiD), (mu‘aariD), (munaahiD), (munaawi’) and (mu‘aady) are used in thirteen Arabic main clauses as New information in Theme position and in seven main Arabic clauses as Given information in Theme position. The results of this analysis suggest that the English-language news reports use these terms as New information in Theme position more than the Arabic-language news reports. In other words, the English news reports tend to thematize a very negative term to describe Syria and present it as New information.

The results of the analysis of the third criterion show that “opponent of Syria(n)” is presented as New information in Rheme position of seven marked thematic structures in the English-language news reports. The English-language news reports use “anti-Syria(n)” in Rheme position of four marked thematic structures. The results of analysing the English-language terms in marked thematic structures in the English news reports are presented in Table 5.34.

| The English-Language Terms | Given | New |
|-----------------------------------|--------------|------------|
| Critic | 0 | 0 |
| Opponent | 3 | 4 |
| Anti-Syria | 1 | 3 |
| Totals | 4 | 7 |

Table 5.34 Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Marked Thematic Structures in the English News Reports

In the Arabic news reports, (mu‘aariD), i.e. “opponent”, and (munaawi’), i.e. “hostile to”, are each presented as New information in marked thematic structures in main Arabic clauses. (MunaahiD li suryaa) is presented as Given information in six marked thematic structures and as New information in four marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports. The results of analysing the Arabic-language terms in marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports are presented in Tables 5.35.

| The Arabic-Language Terms | Given | New |
|----------------------------------|--------------|------------|
| muntaqiD | 1 | 0 |
| mu‘aariD | 0 | 1 |
| munaahiD | 6 | 4 |
| munaawi’ | 0 | 1 |
| mu‘aady | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 7 | 5 |

Table 5.35 Results of Analysing Terms Opposing Syria in Marked Thematic Structures in the Arabic News Reports

The results in Tables 5.34 and 5.35 show that that the Arabic-language terms are mostly presented as Given information in marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports, whereas the English-language terms are mostly presented as New information in marked thematic structures in the English news reports. The results suggest that there is more informational focus on terms opposing Syria in marked thematic structures in the English news reports than in the Arabic news reports.

In terms of the frequency of the English-language and Arabic-language terms used in the selected data to describe Lebanese opposing Syria, the following have been found:

1. the most frequent term opposing Syria used in the data is the English-language term “anti-Syria(n)”. “Anti-Syria(n)” is mentioned 82 times in the English news reports
2. the least frequent term in the data is the Arabic-language term (muntaqiD), i.e. “critic”. (MuntaqiD) is mentioned 3 times in the Arabic news reports

The frequency of each of the English-language terms, i.e. “critic of Syria(n)”, “opponent of Syria” and “anti-Syria(n)”, is presented in Figure 5.17.

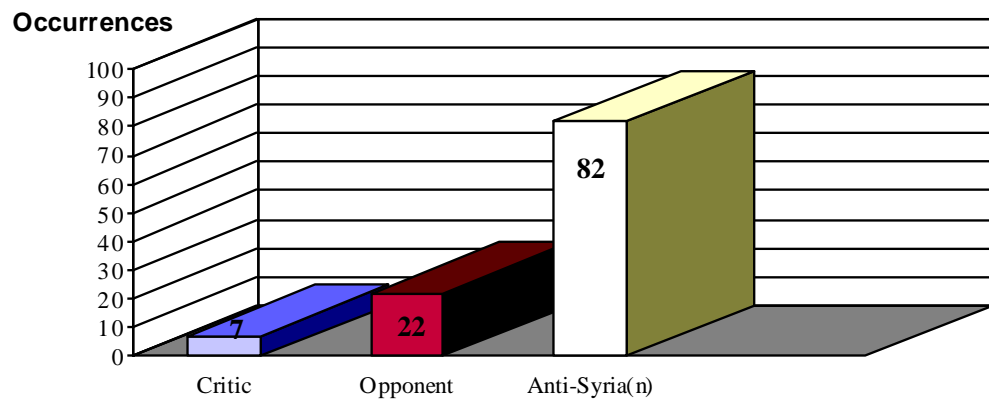


Figure 5.17 Frequency of the English-Language Terms Opposing Syria

The horizontal axis in Figure 5.17 represents the English-language terms and the vertical axis represents the frequency of each of these terms in the English news reports. Figure 5.17 shows that “critic of Syria(n)” is mentioned 7 times, “opponent of Syria” is mentioned 22 times and “anti-Syria(n)” is mentioned 82 times in the English news reports. The frequency of each of the Arabic-language terms, i.e. (muntaqiD), (mu‘aariD), (munaahiD), (munaawi’) and (mu‘aady) is presented in Figure 5.18.

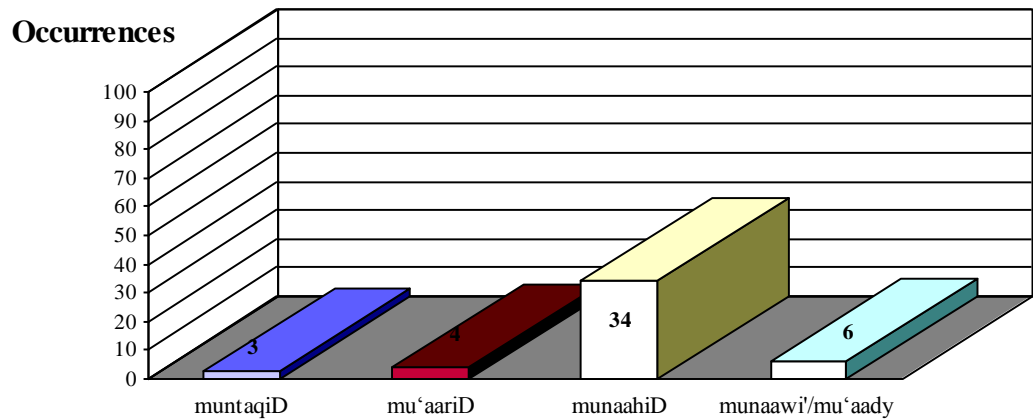


Figure 5.18 The Frequency of the Arabic-Language Terms Opposing Syria

The horizontal axis in Figure 5.18 represents the Arabic-language terms and the vertical axis represents the frequency of each of these terms in the Arabic news reports. The results in Figure 5.18 show that (muntaqiD), i.e. “critic” is mentioned 3 times in the Arabic news reports. (Mu’aariD), i.e. “opponent”, is mentioned 4 times. (MunaahiD), i.e. “resister”, is mentioned 34 times. (Munaawi’) and (mu’aady) are mentioned 6 times in the Arabic news reports. Figure 5.18 shows that (munaahiD) is the most frequent term in the Arabic news report, whereas (muntaqiD) is the least frequent one. In general, the Arabic-language terms opposing Syria are less frequent than the English-language terms as shown in the Figures above.

This section also suggested that the English-language and the Arabic-language terms imply different degrees of negativity towards Syria. The survey which is conducted in section 5.3.1 shows that “anti-Syria(n)” is considered by most native speakers of English to imply the most negative association, whereas “critic” implies the least negative association (see Figure 5.12, in section 5.3.1). With regard to the Arabic-language terms, (mu’aady) implies by definition the most negative and hostile feelings towards Syria, whereas (muntaqiD) implies the least negative association (see Figure 5.16, in section 5.3.1). The frequency of the English-language and the Arabic-language terms and the different degrees of negativity each of these terms implies suggest that the English news reports tend to stress, whether consciously or unconsciously, more negative feelings towards Syria than the Arabic news reports. This negative association also helps to stress the link between Syria and the political assassinations in Lebanon.

To sum up, the results of the analysis carried out in Theme-Rheme structures and in terms of Given and New information show that there is more thematic and informational focus on the English-language terms used to describe Lebanese opposing Syria than on the Arabic-language terms. The results of analysing the frequency of these terms and their negative association in the data show that the English news reports tend to imply more negative feelings towards Syria than the Arabic news reports. This in turn implies that there is more stress on the link between Syria and the assassinations in Lebanon in the English news reports than in the Arabic ones. Hence, the results of this analysis suggest that the English news reports adopt a different ideological stance regarding the presentation of Syria and the opposition against it from the Arabic news reports.

The next section will present the thematic and informational analysis of the different nominalizations used in the data to describe Syria and the death of the Lebanese politicians. The implications behind the use of these nominalizations will be discussed in the next section.

5.4. Nominalization and Lexical Variations

5.4.1. Introductory Remarks

Nominalization is defined as a transformational process in which nouns are derived from verbs and adjectives (see section 4.5.2.2). Lexical variations refer here to the different lexical processes of lexicalization, relexicalization, overlexicalization, direct repetition, synonyms and antonyms (see section 4.5.3). This section studies nine nominalized constituents, which relate to the way Syria is portrayed in the selected corpus and the way attribution of responsibility and human agency are presented. The aims of this section are identified as follows:

- to investigate the use of nominalization in terms of the attribution of responsibility and the implication of human agency
- to investigate whether the English and Arabic news reports, or news media, present nominalization differently in terms of Theme-Rheme analysis and Given-New information

The derived nouns are classified into three groups, which deal with different lexical processes. The first group of nominalization analyses two key lexical variants, namely

“accusation” against Syria vs. “cooperation” of Syria (see section 5.2)²¹⁷. In other words, this group studies the different choices of words regarding the description of Syria-Lebanon relationship, especially in terms of accusing Syria of being behind the series of assassinations in Lebanon and its “cooperation”, or lack of cooperation, with the UN investigation. The second group analyses three nominalised lexical variants, namely “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying”. The reason for choosing these constituents is that the more frequent they are the less attribution of responsibility is assigned in the text. These nominals also imply different degrees of negativity to describe the death of Lebanese politicians. Merriam-Webster defines “killing” as “to deprive one of life”²¹⁸. It also defines “assassination” as to murder a political figure intentionally. The term “slaying”, which is defined as to kill brutally, violently and intentionally, is considered as an overlexicalized term²¹⁹. “Slaying” is an emotive word which implies very strong negative feelings and a dramatic effect of the killing. The third group of nominalization analyses the synonymous terms “blast”, “explosion”, “attack” and “bombing”. These nominalizations differ in the way they imply agency, causality, and attributions of responsibility. To put it differently, the link between a human agent causing an action and the action itself is made either weak or strong depending on the choice of the nominalised synonym. The derived nominals “blast” and “explosion” do not necessarily imply a human agent causing the action, as in “a wind blast” or “an explosion of madness”. The nominal term “attack” is more likely to imply an agent, human or non-human, as in “He died from a heart attack” and “Dogs attack can be lethal”. The term “bombing” is most likely to infer a human agent responsible for the action. The use of these nominalizations and the implication of human agency can be presented on a conceptual scale as in Figure 5.19.

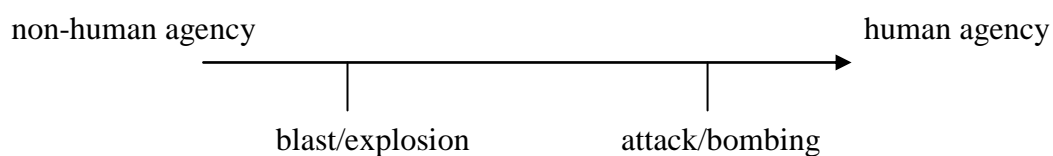


Figure 5.19 A Conceptual Scale of Nominalization and Implication of Agency

Nominals on the left side of Figure 5.19 represent the less implication of human agency causing the action, while nominals on the right side represent more implication of

²¹⁷ Although “accusation” and “cooperation” are not antonyms, they are considered here to function as such because of the role they play in presenting Syria differently in the news.

²¹⁸ A definition by Merriam-Webster dictionary, see <http://www.merriam-webster.com>.

²¹⁹ See section 4.5.3.

human agency. As shown in Figure 5.19, “blast” and “explosion” imply less human agency than “attack” and “bombing”.

These three groups of nominalizations are analysed in Theme-Rheme structures and as Given and New information. Sections 5.4.2, 5.4.3 and 5.4.4 present the analysis and the findings of the three groups of nominalization as Given and New information in Theme position, i.e. thematization of nominalization. Sections 5.5.5 and 5.5.6 present the analysis and the findings of nominalization as marked Themes. Sections 5.4.7, 5.5.8 and 5.4.9 present the analysis and the findings related to nominalization in Rheme position of main clauses, i.e. Rhematization of nominalization. Discussions of the findings are summarized in section 5.4.10.

5.4.2. Thematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation”

This section discusses the findings in the analysis of the first nominalization group in the data as Given and New information in Theme position. For reasons of space and time, not all examples are presented. Only those which are representative of the findings in this study are presented and discussed. The first set of nominalization studies two nominalized constituents “accusation” against Syria and “cooperation” of Syria in terms of Given and New information in Theme position, i.e. thematization. Examples from the data are presented below:

5.118. The US accusation came two days after Walid Jumblatt, the leader of Lebanon’s Druze sect, sought US backing for the international court to try suspects in al-Hariri’s murder. (Al-Jazeera, G3)

5.119. في أعقاب اتهام الإدارة الأمريكية لكل من سوريا و إيران، بدعم حزب الله اللبناني، في إطار ما وصف ب"مؤامرة لإسقاط الحكومة اللبنانية"، سارعت الخارجية السورية إلى نفي هذه الاتهامات، قائلة إنها لا تتدخل في الشأن الداخلي اللبناني.

After the US accusation against Syria and Iran of supporting Hezbollah, in what it called “a conspiracy to bring down the Lebanese government, the Syrian Foreign Ministry quickly denied these accusations stating that it does not interfere with Lebanon internal affairs. (CNN Arabic, G3)

5.120. *Syria’s cooperation appreciated.* (Syria Times’ news headline, G2)

5.121. **Syrian cooperation** "remains an important component of the ongoing work" of his staff, Brammertz said in a progress report to the U.N. Security Council, which ordered the inquiry. (Alarab, G2)

“The US accusation” functions as the Theme and conveys old information in example 5.118. “The US accusation” against Syria is predicted in Al-Jazeera English news report. Previous clauses mention the US claims that Iran and Syria are planning to topple the Lebanese government. Similarly, “the US accusation against Syria”, in example 5.119, is presented as old information in Theme position. “Accusation” is mentioned before in Rheme position in the headline of the CNN Arabic news report. “Syria’s cooperation” in example 5.120 functions as the Theme and is presented as New information. The “cooperation” of Syria cannot be predicted nor mentioned before in *Syria Times*’ English report. The thematization of “Syria’s cooperation” as New information in *Syria Times* news headline is an indication of its pro-Syrian stand and its support of the government. The message intended by “cooperation” in example 5.120 seems different from that in example 5.121. “Syrian cooperation” is described as a requirement and “an important component” of the UN investigation work, in example 5.121, rather than as satisfactory or appreciated. “Syrian cooperation” is presented as Given information in Theme position in example 5.121. However, it is not predicted nor mentioned before in previous clauses in *Alarab* English news report. The Analysis of the first set of nominalization in the thematic structures of the English and Arabic news reports is presented in Table 5.36.

| Thematization | English Reports | | Arabic Reports | |
|---------------|-----------------|-----|----------------|-----|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Accusation | 1 | 0 | 3 | 0 |
| Cooperation | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 |

Table 5.36 Thematization of “Accusations” and “Cooperation”: Results

The results in Table 5.36 show that “accusation” is presented once in Theme position in the English news report and three times in Theme position in the Arabic news reports. “Accusation” against Syria is presented as Given information in Theme position in the English and Arabic reports. The results in Table 5.36 also show that Syria’s “cooperation” is presented four times in Theme position in the English news reports. There is no mention of Syria’s “cooperation” in Theme position in the Arabic news reports. On the one hand, the analysis shows that the Arabic news reports foreground

the “accusation” against Syria by presenting it as Given information in Theme position more than the English news reports. In other words, the Arabic news reports tend to avoid blaming and implicating Syria in the series of assassinations in Lebanon. On the other hand, the analysis also shows that the English news reports thematize “cooperation” as Given and New information. To put it differently, there is more informational focus on “cooperation” in Theme position in the English news reports than in the Arabic reports. This, however, does not mean that Syria’s “cooperation” is presented positively in the English news reports, see section 5.2. With the exception of *Syria Times*, most English news reports present a different picture of Syria’s cooperation from the Arabic ones, as illustrated in example 5.121 above. The analysis of “accusation” and “cooperation” in the data shows that these elements are presented differently as Given/New information in Theme position. This suggests that the informational and thematic presentation of “accusation” and “cooperation” in theme position helps to reveal different views and underlying ideologies regarding the way Syria is presented in the English and Arabic news reports.

5.4.3 Thematization of “Killing”, “Assassination” and “Slaying”

The second set of nominalization constitutes the synonyms “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying”. Examples of the use of these terms in Theme position in the English and Arabic news reports are:

5.122. **The killing** [of Eido] was promptly condemned by the White House.
(Al-Manar, G5)

5.123. The assassination of the Lebanese Minister Pierre al-Jmaiel came at the time when the opposition wants to take to the streets.
(SANA, G 4)

5.124. The U.N. investigator into the slaying of Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq al-Hariri said on Monday he was close to amassing evidence in the case that would stand up in court.
(Alarab, G2)

5.125. مقتل عشرة بينهم نائب معارض لسوريا في انفجار ببيروت
Killing of ten, including an opponent of Syria, in Beirut blast.
(Reuters1, headline, G5)

5.126. وتزامن اغتيال تويني مع تقديم تقرير القاضي الألماني ديتليف ميليس رئيس لجنة التحقيق الدولية في اغتيال رفيق الحريري إلى الأمين العام للأمم المتحدة كوفي أنان.

Coincided the assassination of Tueni with a report, by the German judge Detlev Mehlis, Chief of the International Investigation Committee into the assassination of Rafiq al-Hariri, delivered to the UN Security-General Kofi Annan. (Al-Jazeera, G1)

“Killing” functions as the Theme in example 5.122. It is presented as known information. The death of Eido is mentioned in a previous clause in Al-Manar English news report, namely “Lebanese MP Walid Eido was killed Tuesday afternoon when a bomb explosion targeted his car in Beirut’s seafront”. “Assassination”, in example 5.123, functions as part of the Theme and is presented as known information. Although the “assassination” of Pierre Gemayel is not mentioned before it is presented in example 5.123 as predicted and old information. “Slaying”, which is presented as Given information in Theme position in example 5.124, is not mentioned before in this report. This clause comes in the lead paragraph and immediately after the headline of *Alarab*’s report. In other words, “slaying”, which is an overlexicalized nominal term, receives an informational and thematic focus in *Alarab*’s English report. The analysis suggests that the writers of this report aim at evaluating a political situation and shocking the readers by presenting information in such a way. Example 5.125 is the news headline of Reuters English news report in the second group of the data. “Killing” in example 5.125 functions as part of the Theme as is presented as New information. “Assassination” in example 5.126 is presented as Given information in Theme position. “Assassination” in example 5.126 is mentioned in the news headline and six previous clauses in Al-Jazeera’s report. The analysis of “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying” as Themes, or part of the Themes, in the English and Arabic news reports shows the following results:

- the nominal term “killing” is thematized in ten main clauses and is mostly presented as Given information in the English news reports
- “killing” is thematized in seven main clauses and is presented as Given and New information in the Arabic news reports
- “Assassination” is thematized in twelve main clauses and is mostly presented as Given information in the English news reports
- “Assassination” is thematized in nineteen Arabic clauses and is mostly presented as Given information in the Arabic news reports

- “slaying” is thematized in three main clauses and is presented as New information in the English news reports
- the term “slaying” is not used in the Arabic news report.

These results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.37.

| Thematization | English | | Arabic | |
|---------------|-----------|----------|-----------|----------|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Killing | 9 | 1 | 3 | 4 |
| Assassination | 10 | 2 | 17 | 2 |
| Slaying | 0 | 3 | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 19 | 6 | 20 | 6 |

Table 5.37 Thematization of the Second Nominalization Group: Results

The results in Table 5.37 show that “killing” and “assassination” are mostly presented as Given information in Theme position in the data. The results in Table 5.37 also show that “assassination” is more frequently used in Theme position in the Arabic news reports than in the English news reports. In other words, the Arabic news reports tend to foreground these nominalizations and avoid attributing responsibility for the death of the Lebanese politicians more than the English news reports. Unlike the Arabic news reports, the English ones thematize an overlexicalized term, “slaying”, and present it as New information. The use of an emotive term, “slaying”, and the informational focus it receives in Theme position in the English news reports evoke the readers’ reaction and condemnation towards the act of killing. The term “slaying”, which is never used in the Arabic news reports, implies an evaluation of the situation in Lebanon. It also helps to project a specific view, which is different from that presented in the Arabic news reports. The thematic and informational analysis of these nominal variations can thus help to indicate different underlying ideologies in news presentation in the English and Arabic news reports.

The next section will analyse the third nominalization group in the data and discuss the findings related to their use in Theme position.

5.4.4 Thematization of “Blast”, “Explosion”, “Attack” and “Bombing”

The third set of nominalization analyses the nominal constituents “attack”, “blast” “explosion” and “bombing” in Theme position in the data. Examples from the data are presented below:

5.127. وقع الاعتداء حين انفجرت سيارة مفخخة حوالي الساعة التاسعة بالتوقيت المحلي (7,00 تغ) في ضاحية بيروت المسيحية.

Happened the attack when a booby-trapped car exploded around 9 PM local time (7.00 GMT) in the Christian Beirut suburb. (AFP1, G1)

5.128. The latest blast comes two weeks after the UN Security Council voted to set up a tribunal to try suspects in the death of Mr Hariri, killed in a car bombing. (BBC, G5)

5.129. Beirut car bombing kills anti-Syrian MP. (Alarab news headline, G1)

“Attack” functions as part of the thematic elements in example 5.127. It is presented as Given information. “Attack” is mentioned in the headline of the AFP report, example 5.130, and in previous clauses, example 5.131.

5.130. مقتل النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في اعتداء.
Killing of Lebanese MP Gibran Tueni in an attack.

5.131. ذكر مصور وكالة فرانس برس أن النائب المسيحي اللبناني المعادي لسوريا جبران تويني رئيس مجلس إدارة صحيفة النهار اللبنانية قتل الاثنين في اعتداء بسيارة مفخخة في ضاحية المكلس شرق بيروت.
Mentioned AFP photographer that the Christian anti-Syria MP and the Chief Editor of Annahar newspaper, Gibran Tueni, was killed on Monday in an **attack**.

“The latest blast” which functions as the Theme, in example 5.129, is also presented as old information. “Blast” is mentioned in Theme and Rheme positions of previous clauses in the BBC report, as shown in examples 5.132 and 5.133.

5.132. Wednesday’s blast was the sixth explosion in four weeks in Lebanon.

5.133. Two people were killed in the previous **blast**.

“Beirut car bombing” functions as the Theme and is presented as New information in Alarab’s news headline, example 5.129. “Beirut car Bombing” cannot be predicted and is not mentioned before in this report. The analysis of the third group of nominalization shows that the English news reports thematize “blast”, “explosion” “attack” and “bombing” more than the Arabic ones. The analysis also shows that these nominals are mostly presented as Given information in Theme position in the English and Arabic reports. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.38.

| Thematization | English | | Arabic | |
|-----------------|-----------|----------|-----------|----------|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Blast/explosion | 19 | 3 | 13 | 4 |
| Attack | 9 | 1 | 5 | 0 |
| Bombing | 6 | 1 | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 34 | 5 | 18 | 4 |

Table 5.38 Thematization of the Third Nominalization Group: Results

While the informational analysis of the third group of nominalization in Theme position show similar results in terms of Given and New information, the thematic analysis shows different results. The English news reports tend to thematize “attack” and “bombing” more often than the Arabic news reports. Section 5.4.1 has argued that nominals such as “attack” and “bombing” imply human agency more than “blast” and “explosion”. In other words, there is more thematic emphasis on nominalizations which imply human agency in the English news reports than in the Arabic news reports. The English news reports tend to assign more blame and responsibility than the Arabic reports.

The next section will analyse the selected nominalizations in marked thematic structures in the English news reports and discuss the findings related to this analysis.

5.4.5 Nominalization as Marked Themes in the English News Reports

The selected nominalizations are analysed as marked Themes and in terms of Given and New information in the data. Nominalizations functioning as marked Themes are identified in six main clauses in the English news reports and presented below:

5.134. Since the **kill**ing of Mr Hariri, *Christian and anti-Syrian areas have been the target of at least 14 blasts.* (BBC, G2)

5.135. Since the **Hariri kill**ing, *prominent opposition journalists and columnists have been killed in similar attacks.* (CNN1, G2)

5.136. After the **Hariri assass**ination, *facing growing Lebanese protests and mounting international pressure, Syria withdrew its forces from Lebanon.* (CNN1, G2)

5.137. Before prominent Christian politician Pierre Gemayel’s **slaying** in a brazen Beirut shooting Tuesday, Hezbollah had *threatened to hold its own mass protests in an attempt to bring down the U.S.-backed government of Prime Minister Fuad Saniora*. (CNN, G4)

5.138. At the scene of the **bombing**, *an elderly man wept, pounded his head and shouted: "My God, Gibran, you were the only one who told the truth!"* (CNN1, G1)

5.139. At the scene of the **bombing**, *an elderly man wept...* (CNN2, G1)

The Fronted Adjuncts, underlined, function as marked Themes in the above examples. New information is presented in italics. The nominal constituents, “killing”, “assassination”, “slaying” and “bombing”, function as the topical Themes. The informational analysis shows that these nominals are presented as Given information in the English news reports. “Killing”, in examples 5.134 and 5.135, and “assassination”, in example 5.136, are old information, which the readers are expected to know about Hariri’s death from previous reports. Hariri’s killing, on 14 February 2005, took place a year before these reports were published. “Slaying”, in examples 5.137, and “bombing”, in examples 5.138 and 5.139, are mentioned in previous clauses in these news reports. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.39.

| Nominalization | Marked Themes | |
|----------------|---------------|----------|
| | Given | New |
| Accusations | 0 | 0 |
| Cooperation | 0 | 0 |
| killing | 2 | 0 |
| Assassination | 1 | 0 |
| Slaying | 1 | 0 |
| Blast | 0 | 0 |
| Explosion | 0 | 0 |
| Attack | 0 | 0 |
| Bombing | 2 | 0 |
| Total | 6 | 0 |

Table 5.39 Nominalization as Marked Themes in the English News Reports: Results

No predicated Themes or identifying Themes are identified in the analysis of nominalization in the English news reports. The analysis of nominalizations as marked

Themes shows they are presented as Given information in the English news reports. The relevance of these results will be discussed in the next section, which carries out the same analysis in the Arabic news reports.

5.4.6 Nominalization as Marked Themes in the Arabic News Reports

Nominalization as Marked Themes are identified in 27 main clauses in the Arabic news reports. The analysis of these clauses shows that they are mostly presented as background information in marked thematic structures in the Arabic news reports. Examples of nominalizations as marked Themes and as Given information are presented in the examples below:

5.140. وتعليقا على اتهام الولايات المتحدة لسوريا بتهريب السلاح لـ <حزب الله> وانتهاك القرار 1701 رأى مصطفى أن <مصداقية الحكومة الأميركية الحالية باتت منخفضة>. Commenting on the US accusation against Syria of smuggling weapons to Hezbollah and violating decision 1701, Mustaf said <the credibility of the American government became low>. (NBN, G3)

5.141. و بعد ساعات من مقتل تويني قال فريق تحقيق تابع للأمم المتحدة في تقريره المبدئي أن لديه أدلة جديدة تعزز النتائج السابقة بتورط سوريا في مقتل الحريري و أن دمشق أعاقت التحقيق. Hours after Tueni's killing, the UN investigation team said in its primal report that they have *new leads confirming the previous results of Syria's involvement in killing Hariri and that Damascus impeded the investigation*. (Reuters, G1)

5.142. وكان اغتيال الحريري و 20 شخصاً آخرين في فبراير/شباط قد أدى إلى احتجاجات ضخمة ضد سوريا في لبنان، و قاد إلى انسحاب القوات السورية منه. (Kaana) the assassination of Hariri and 20 others in February has resulted in huge protests against Syria in Lebanon and lead to the withdrawal of the Syrian forces. (BBC, G1)

5.143. و كانت سلسلة من الانفجارات و الاغتيالات هزت لبنان. (Kaanat) a series of explosions and assassinations shook Lebanon. (NBN, G1)

5.144. والاعتداء على جبران تويني هو الاعتداء الثالث عشر في لبنان منذ اغتيال رفيق الحريري في شباط/فبراير 2005. The attack on Gibran Tueni is the thirtieth attack in Lebanon since the assassination of Rafiq Hariri in February 2005. (AFP2, G1)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. “The US accusation against Syria” is presented as Given information and functions as part of the marked Theme in example 5.140. “Accusation”, in example, 5.140, is mentioned in three previous clauses, including the headline and a subheading, in the NBN Arabic news report. The marked Theme, “hours after Tueni’s assassination”, functions as a fronted Adjunct in example 5.141. “Tueni’s killing” is presented in this example as old information. It is mentioned in previous clauses in the Reuters Arabic report. The marked Theme, “the assassination of Hariri and 20 others”, is a fronted Subject which is preceded by the empty verb, (kaana), in example 5.142. Hariri’s “assassination” is presented as old information in the BBC Arabic report. The marked Theme in example 5.143, “a series of explosions and assassinations” is a nominal phrase functioning as a fronted Subject and preceded by the empty verb, “kaanat”. The two nominal constituents, “explosions” and “assassinations”, in example 5.143, are presented as old information. They are mentioned before in the NBN Arabic report. “The attack on Gibran Tueni”, in example 5.144, is a fronted Subject in Arabic and a marked Theme. The marked thematic elements, in example 5.144, are presented as old information. This information is mentioned before in the fourth main clause in the AFP Arabic report.

In addition to the above examples, twelve others are identified as marked Themes and as Given information. Nominalizations as marked Themes and as New information are identified in Eight clauses in the Arabic data. These clauses are presented below:

5.145. مقتل النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في اعتداء.
Killing Lebanese MP Gibran Tueni in an attack. (AFP1, headline, G1)

5.146. مقتل النائب و الإعلامي جبران تويني بانفجار بضواحي بيروت.
Killing MP and journalist Gibran Tueni in Beirut blast. (CNN2, headline, G1)

5.147. مقتل عشرة بينهم نائب معارض لسوريا في انفجار ببيروت.
Killing ten including an opponent-of-Syria MP in Beirut Blast.
 (Reuters, headline, G5)

5.148. مقتل النائب اللبناني وليد عيدو في تفجير غربي بيروت.
Killing Lebanese MP Walid Eido in west Beirut blast. (CNN, headline, G5)

5.149. اغتيال النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في انفجار سيارة مفخخة.
The Assassination of Lebanese MP Gibran Tueni in an explosion of a booby-trapped car. (AFP, headline, G1)

5.150. اغتيال النائب وليد عيدو ونجله في قلب بيروت.
The Assassination of MP Walid Eido and his son in the heart of Beirut. (NBN, headline, G5)

5.151. اغتيال النائب وليد عيدو في انفجار بمنطقة الروشة.
Assassination of MP Walid Eido in Rawshah blast. (Al-Manar, headline, G5)

5.152. اعتداء على الأمم المتحدة
Attack on the United Nations (Alarab, subheading, G4)

New information is presented in italics in the above headlines. Nominalizations which are presented as New information and function as marked Themes in the Arabic data occur in news headlines and subheadings. Thematic and rhematic elements in news headline are usually presented as New information. They cannot be predicted nor mentioned before. The analysis in the Arabic news reports shows no examples of these nominals in predicated or identifying Themes. The analysis also shows that Nominalization as marked Themes are presented as Given information, except in Arabic news headlines and subheadings. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.40.

| Nominalization | Marked Themes | |
|----------------|---------------|----------|
| | Given | New |
| Accusations | 2 | 0 |
| Cooperation | 0 | 0 |
| killing | 1 | 4 |
| Assassination | 8 | 3 |
| Slaying | 0 | 0 |
| Blast | 4 | 0 |
| Explosion | 0 | 0 |
| Attack | 2 | 1 |
| Bombing | 0 | 0 |
| Total | 18 | 8 |

Table 5.40 Nominalization as Marked Themes in the Arabic News Reports: Results

Table 5.40 presents the frequency of nominalizations as marked Themes presenting Given and New information in the Arabic news reports. In total, there are 18 Arabic clauses with nominalization functioning as marked Themes and presenting old information (see Table 5.40). There are 8 Arabic clauses with nominalization functioning as marked themes and presenting New information. Generally speaking, there are more nominalizations functioning as marked Themes and presenting old information than nominalizations functioning as marked Themes and presenting New information in the Arabic news reports.

To sum up, the analysis of the selected news reports shows that the selected nominalizations functioning as marked Themes are more frequently used in the Arabic news reports than in the English news reports. In other words, there is more thematic focus on these elements in the Arabic news reports than in the English news reports. The more these nominalizations are used in the news reports the less attribution of responsibility is assigned. The analysis thus suggests that the Arabic news reports tend to avoid attributing responsibility especially by presenting these nominalizations as background information in Theme position.

The next section will investigate the use of these nominalizations in Rheme position in the data and discuss the findings related to this analysis.

5.4.7 Rhematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation”

This section studies the selected nominalizations in Rheme position and analyses them as Given and New information. As in the previous section, examples of each nominalization in the data are presented and analysed and the findings of this analysis are discussed. The analysis of the first nominalization group, “accusation” and “cooperation”, shows that most of the English news reports present “accusation” and “cooperation” as New information in Rheme position of main clauses. The analysis also shows that most of the Arabic news reports present “accusation” as Given information in Rheme position, while present “cooperation” as New information. Examples of “accusation” and “cooperation” in Rheme position in the data are presented below:

5.153. *Syria and Iran dismiss U.S. **accusation** on Lebanon*²²⁰.

(Reuters, headline, G3)

5.154. and [the UN report] noted *further* Syrian **cooperation** with the probe.

(Al-Manar, G2)

5.155. The 25-page report refers to the "*slow pace*" of Syrian **cooperation**, saying "*it is up to the Syrian authorities to be more forthcoming in order to make headway in a process that will be most probably a long one if it is to be judged against the pace of progress to date.*"

(CNN1, G1)

5.156. وأعرب المصدر عن اعتقاده أن من يستغل مسلسل الجرائم الذي استهدف شخصيات لبنانية على خلاف مع سورية لتوجيه الاتهام إليها إنما يسهم مع الأيدي الخفية في تنفيذ مخطط تأمري على لبنان وسورية معا.

Expressed the source its belief that those who use the series of crimes, which targeted Lebanese figures opposing to Syria, to direct the **accusation** to it [Syria] are *contributing with the hidden hands to carry out a conspiratorial scheme against Lebanon and Syria together.*

(SANA, G5)

5.157. المحقق الدولي يثنى على تعاون سوريا.

The International Investigator commends the **cooperation** of Syria.

(Alarab's headline, G2)

New information is presented in italics in the above examples. Example 5.153 is the first main clause in Reuters English report and the news headline. Theme and Rheme elements in example 5.153 are presented as unknown information. "Accusation" functions as part of the rhematic elements and New information in 5.153. "Cooperation" is presented as Given information and functions as the Rheme proper in example 5.154. Although, "cooperation" is not mentioned before in Al-Manar's report, the word "further" indicates predicted information which the readers are expected to know about. "The slow pace of Syrian cooperation", in example 5.155, is presented as New information. It cannot be predicted and is not mentioned before in the CNN report. The CNN report describes the Syrian government as reluctant to offer any assistance in the UN investigation. The Syrian "cooperation" is thus described

²²⁰ New information is presented in Italics. The selected nominal terms are presented in bold face.

negatively in this report. “Accusation” is presented as Given information in example 5.156. “Accusation” is mentioned in a previous clause in SANA’s report, “the source strongly denounced...the campaigns of lies and fabrication by some Lebanese who consistently direct the **accusation** to Syria immediately after any crime”²²¹. In the latter example, “accusation” is presented as mere allegations against Syria. The SANA report presents a positive picture of Syria. It affirms Syria’s innocence by presenting these “accusation” as background information. “Cooperation” of Syria, in example 5.157, occurs in Rheme position of *Alarab* news headline. The rhematic elements, “commends the cooperation of Syria” is presented as New information. “Cooperation” in *Alarab* news report is described positively and presented as New information in example 5.157. The results of this analysis in the English and Arabic news reports are presented in Table 5.41.

| Rhematization | English | | Arabic | |
|---------------|---------|-----|--------|-----|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Accusations | 7 | 8 | 39 | 10 |
| Cooperation | 3 | 5 | 8 | 14 |

Table 5.41 Rhematization of “Accusation” and “Cooperation”: Results

The results in Table 5.41 show that the Arabic news reports use “accusation” and “cooperation” in Rheme position more than the English news reports. However, the informational focus on these elements is presented differently in the English and Arabic news reports. The English news reports tend to place an informational focus on the “accusation” against Syria, while the Arabic news reports tend to present it as old and background information. The “accusation” against Syria is described as mere allegations in the Arabic news reports. The analysis of “cooperation” shows that there is more informational focus on “cooperation” in the Arabic news reports than in the English news reports (see Table 5.41). The “cooperation” of Syria is described positively in the Arabic news reports and is emphasised as New information, whereas it is described negatively in the English news reports. The informational focus in the English news reports falls on the lack of cooperation rather than on Syria’s efforts to cooperate with the UN Investigation. The results of the informational analysis in Rheme position suggest an ideological difference in the way Syria is presented in the English and Arabic news reports.

²²¹ Translated from SANA’s Arabic news report, G5.

The next section will analyse the second group of nominalizations in Rheme position in the data.

5.4.8 Rhematization of “Killing”, “Assassination” and “Slaying”

The second group of nominalization analyses “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying” as rhematic elements and in terms of Given and New information in the data. Examples of the use of these nominalizations in the data are presented below:

5.158. But he said there had been *14 assassinations and assassination attempts* in Lebanon since the February 2005 **killings** of former Prime Minister Rafiq Hariri in Beirut. (Syria-New, G3)

5.159. Eido was a *close ally* of Rafiq al-Hariri, a former prime minister whose **assassination** in February 2005 was also blamed on Syria. (Al-Jazeera, G5)

5.160. The inquiry also reaffirmed an earlier suspicion that a series of 14 other politically motivated **killings** in Lebanon that followed the Hariri **slaying** were *linked in some ways*. (Alarab, G2)

5.161. قد أعلن الحداد الرسمي ثلاثة أيام في لبنان بدءاً من يوم الأربعاء حداداً على مقتل الجميل الذي كان نائباً في البرلمان ووزيراً للصناعة. (Qad) was Announced formal mourning for three days in Lebanon, starting from Wednesday, to mourn the **killings** of Gemayel, a Member of Parliament and the Industry Minister. (BBC, G4)

5.162. ودعا رئيس الوزراء اللبناني فؤاد السنيورة إلى الجلسة الطارئة عقب اغتيال الإعلامي ونائب البرلمان... جبران تويني. Called the Lebanese Prime Minister, Fuad Siniora, to the urgent session after the **assassination** of the journalist and MP... Gibran Tueni. (CNN1, G1)

“Killing”, which is part of the rhematic elements in example 5.158, is presented as Given information. Although not mentioned before, the “killing” of Hariri is predicted from previous reports in Syria News. “Assassination”, in example 5.159, also functions as part of the rhematic elements and conveys Given information. The “assassination” of Hariri is background information and an event which took place in the past. “Killing”

and “slaying” in example 5.160 are presented as Given information in Rheme positions. In this clause, “killing” is predicted information. The *Alarab* report deals with the investigation into Hariri’s murder, which took place a year before. “Slaying” is old information because it is mentioned in a previous clause in *Alarab*’s report: “The U.N. investigator into the *slaying* of Lebanese Prime Minister Rafiq al-Hariri said on Monday he was close to amassing evidence in the case that would stand up in court”. The “killing” of Gemayel” functions as part of the Rheme and is presented as Given information in example 5.161. The nominal term, “killing” and Gemayel’s death is predicted from previous clauses, especially in the headline, “the funeral of Gemayel in Beirut”. The thematic elements, “the Lebanese PM Fuad Siniora”, are presented as New information in example 5.162. This information is not mentioned before in the CNN report. The rhematic elements, “urgent session after the assassination of... Gibran Tueni”, is presented as old information in example 5.162. The “assassination” of Tueni is mentioned in a previous clause, “a stormy session of the Lebanese government has ended on Monday by calling for an international investigation into the series of **assassinations**”, and in the headline, “Lebanese Government demand international investigation into the **assassinations**”²²² of the CNN report. The analysis of the second group of nominalizations as the Rheme, or part of the Rheme, shows that they are presented mostly as Given information in both English and Arabic news reports in the data, as shown in the examples above. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.42.

| Rhematization | English Reports | | Arabic Reports | |
|---------------|-----------------|-----|----------------|-----|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| Killing | 76 | 19 | 38 | 13 |
| Assassination | 79 | 15 | 239 | 40 |
| Slaying | 5 | 0 | 0 | 0 |

Table 5.42 Rhematization of the Second Nominalization Group: Results

The results in Table 5.42 show that the English news reports in the data use the nominals “killing” and “slaying” in Rheme position of main clauses more than the Arabic news reports. The use of a strong emotive word, “slaying”, in the English news reports suggest an element of evaluation towards the act of killing. The results in Table 5.39 also show that the Arabic news reports use very large numbers of “assassination” in Rheme position as Given information. This suggests that the Arabic news reports tend to avoid attributing responsibility for the killings more than the English news

²²² Both examples are translated from the Arabic CNN report.

reports. Moreover, the Arabic news reports do not use the overlexicalized term “slaying”. This also suggests a non-evaluative attitude towards the killings in the Arabic news reports. The informational analysis of “killing”, “assassination” and “slaying” in Rheme position helps to indicate ideological differences in presenting the news in the English and Arabic news reports.

The next section will investigate the informational use of the third nominal group in Rheme position in the data.

5.4.9 Rhematization of “Blast”, “Explosion”, “Attack” and “Bombing”

The third nominalization group which is investigated and analysed in Rheme position and in terms of Given and New information in the data is “blast” “explosion”, “attack” and “bombing”. These nominalizations differ in the way they imply human agency and attribute responsibility (section 5.4.1). “Blast” and “explosion” may or may not imply an agent responsible for the action. “Attack” implies an agent, human or non-human, responsible for the action. “Bombing” strongly implies a human agent responsible for the action. Examples from the data are presented below:

5.163. The body of Mr Tueni and three others were recovered several hundred metres away from the blast site. (BBC, G1)

5.164. His son Khaled, two bodyguards and six other people were also killed in the **attack**. (Al-Manar, G5)

5.165. March 14 MP Walid Eido assassinated in Beirut bombing. (NBN’s headline, G5)

5.166. Walid Eido assassinated in Beirut bombing. (Al-Manar’s headline, G5)

5.167. وأفادت الأنباء أن الانفجار ناجم عن سيارة ملغومة. Reported the news that the **blast** was caused by a *booby-trapped car*. (BBC, G5)

5.168. من جهة ثانية رأى ديتليف ميليس الرئيس السابق للجنة التحقيق الدولية في اغتيال الحريري، أن اغتيال الوزير الجميل اعتداء على الأمم المتحدة.

On the other hand, saw Detlev Mehlis, the former International Chief Investigator into the assassination of Hariri, that the assassination of Minister Gemayel is an **attack** on the United Nations. (Alarab, G4)

The nominal terms, “blast”, “explosion” and “attack”, function as part of the rhematic elements and convey Given information in examples 5.163, 5.164, 5.167 and 5.168. They are either mentioned in previous clauses, predicted from the context, or presented as background information. The nominal term, “bombing”, in examples 5.165 and 5.166, is presented as New information. This information is not mentioned before and cannot be predicted. As illustrated in these examples, the analysis of the data shows that “blast”, “explosion” and “attack” are mostly presented as Given information in Rheme position in the English and Arabic news reports. The analysis of the English news reports shows that the nominal term “bombing” is used in Rheme position as New information more than Given information. The results of this analysis are presented in Table 5.43.

| Rhematization | English | | Arabic | |
|---------------|---------|-----|--------|-----|
| | Given | New | Given | New |
| blast | 28 | 9 | 43 | 25 |
| Explosion | 17 | 8 | 28 | 11 |
| Attack | 61 | 14 | 25 | 14 |
| Bombing | 13 | 16 | 0 | 0 |

Table 5.43 Rhematization of the Third Nominalization Group: Results

The results in Table 5.43 show that “blast” is used 37 times in Rheme position in the English news reports and 68 times in Rheme position in the Arabic news reports. “Explosion” is used 25 times in Rheme position in the English news reports and 39 times in Rheme position in the Arabic news reports. In other words, “blast” and “explosion” are more frequently used as Given information in Rheme position in the Arabic news reports than in the English ones. “Attack” is used 75 times in the English news reports and 39 times in the Arabic news reports (see Table 5.43). “Bombing” is used 29 times in Rheme position in the English news reports, whereas there is no mention of “bombing” in Rheme position in the Arabic news reports. The results, in Table 5.43, show that the English news reports use “attack” and “bombing” in Rheme position more than the Arabic news reports. Section 5.4.1 has argued that “attack” and “bombing” imply a human agent responsible for the action, whereas “blast” and “explosion” may or may not imply an agent responsible for the action. Thus, the

analysis of this group of nominalization suggests that the English news reports tend to imply human agents responsible for the killings in Lebanon, whereas the Arabic news reports tend to avoid attributing responsibility or implying human agency. To put it differently, the Arabic news reports tend to present the news more neutrally than the English news reports. Theme-Rheme and Given-New analysis helps to indicate underlying ideological differences in news presentation in the selected data.

Having analysed the selected nominalizations in Theme-Rheme structures and as Given and New information, the following section will summarize the results in this section and discuss the relevance of these findings to the presentation of the news in the English and Arabic reports.

5.4.10 Concluding Remarks

Section 5.4 has investigated and analysed three nominal groups as Given and New information in Theme-Rheme structures in the data. The selected nominalizations are considered significant in understanding the different meaning relations, presuppositions and attributions of causality and human agency in the implication of Syria in the recent assassinations in Lebanon. The analysis shows that these nominalizations are presented differently in Theme-Rheme structures and as Given/New information in the English and Arabic news reports. On the one hand, the English news reports tend to emphasise Syria's lack of cooperation as New information in Theme and Rheme positions. Thematization of nominalisations is more frequent in unmarked thematic structures in the English news reports than in the Arabic ones. The nominals "bombing" and "attack", which strongly imply human agents, possibly Syrians, responsible for the assassinations in Lebanon, are both thematically and informationally focused in the English reports. They occur as Themes and are presented as New information in Rheme positions more often in the English reports than in the Arabic ones. An overlexicalized term, i.e. "slaying", is also thematized and presented as New information in the English news reports. The analysis indicates that the use of nominalizations, implications and presuppositions and their organization in the thematic structures of the English-language reports emphasise a certain viewpoint and naturalize the assumption that Syria is responsible for the recent murders in Lebanon. The analysis also indicates underlying ideologies regarding the representations of Syria in these reports.

On the other hand, the Arabic news reports tend to present a positive picture of Syria and its cooperation with the UN investigation. The cooperation of Syria receives an informational focus in Rheme position in the Arabic news reports, while the “accusation” against Syria is foregrounded and presented as old information. Nominalizations such as “assassination”, “blast” and “explosion” are more frequently used as Given information in Theme and Rheme positions in the Arabic news reports than in the English reports. The repetition of these nominalizations, especially as Given information, which least imply human agency and evoke emotional reaction, suggests that the Arabic news reports tend to avoid attributing responsibility for the assassinations. In addition, the nominals “bombing” and “slaying” are never mentioned in the Arabic corpus. “Attack” is much less used in Theme-Rheme structures in the Arabic reports than in the English ones. In terms of markedness, there is a tendency towards using nominalization as marked Themes in the Arabic news reports. These marked structures tend to emphasise Given information of nominalizations. However, when thematized as New information, i.e. in headlines, nominalizations tend to attract the reader’s attention to the main event rather than implying the responsibility of any party for these assassinations. Generally speaking, there is more thematic and informational focus on nominalizations, especially those implying human responsibility and evoking strong emotions, in the English news reports than in the Arabic news reports. At the same time, there are much more nominalizations in Rheme positions presented as Given information in the Arabic news reports than in the English reports. The results of this analysis strongly suggest that the Arabic news reports avoid attributing responsibility for and implicating Syria in the assassinations in Lebanon. The thematic and informational analysis of these nominalizations helps to indicate these differences and reveal underlying ideologies in news presentation in the English and Arabic news reports.

Having analysed nominalizations and investigated the different presentations of Syria in the series of assassinations in Lebanon, the next chapter will summarize the methods adopted in this study and present the findings of the thematic and informational analysis in the data.

CHAPTER SIX

CONCLUSION

6.1 Summary of the Objectives and Methods of Analysis

The broad aim of this study has been to investigate the ideological representations of Syria and the implications behind the different choices of Themes and Rhemes in news presentations in English and Arabic news reports and news media. More specifically, starting from the assumption that the analysis of the thematic structures in news discourse and the choices made by news media and news journalists to assign the roles of Themes or Rhemes to sentence elements should unravel underlying ideologies and different trends in news presentations in English and Arabic, the study sought to identify these differences and describe patterns of Theme-Rheme organizations and selections which can typify the English and Arabic news reports.

In order to investigate these issues, a range of sources were drawn on (e.g. from Discourse Analysis, the socio-cognitive theory, Critical Discourse Analysis, the Prague School approach, the Functional Sentence Perspective approach and Halliday's Systemic Functional Linguistics). This study developed a conceptual framework which combined the constructional, structural, ideological and linguistic aspects of news discourse analysis. Firstly, the conceptual framework defined the concept of discourse and identified the discursive and social practices which underlie the production of the news and the construction of social meanings and realities. Secondly, it proposed a structural model which focused on the contextual and textual dimensions of English and Arabic news reports. Thirdly, it defined the concept of ideology and identified its social and cognitive aspects such as rationalization, habitualization and the roles of news media. Fourthly, it adopted the Critical Linguistics approach and enhanced its methods and tools by developing the Theme/Rheme methodology in English and Arabic.

The proposed conceptual model and the developed methods and tools were investigated in a bilingual corpus of mainstream online news media which publish their reports in English and Arabic. In order to ensure that the findings of this study would be meaningful and generalizable, it was essential to ensure that not only the data were representative of the genre, text type and topics under examination, but also that the two sets of English and Arabic reports were comparable. This was achieved by assessing

contextual and situational characteristics of the genre and establishing a set of criteria for inclusion, for example carrying out a random stratified sampling of national and international online news media which provide Arabic and English news reports and deal with a specific political event in the Middle East.

In general, qualitative and quantitative methods for analysis were used to describe the Thematic Progression patterns, macrostructures, thematic structures, Theme-Rheme organizations, lexical variations, nominalizations and their implications in order to identify the ideological representations of Syria in the selected corpus.

6.2 Findings of the Study

A number of findings emerged from the quantitative and qualitative analyses of Theme-Rheme structures in the English and Arabic news reports. The analysis of thematic patterns shows that the English news reports tend to use simple linear progression patterns, whereas the Arabic news reports tend to use continuous Themes. The relation between Thematic Progression patterns and text types in English and Arabic has been studied by many linguists, including Hatim (1989) and Hatim and Mason (1990). They (1990: 218) note that “Thematic progression relates the way themes and rhemes concatenate within a text to the hierarchic organization of the text and ultimately to rhetorical purpose”. In other words, thematic patterns are always employed to serve an overriding rhetorical purpose. Hatim and Mason (1990) suggest that an emerging simple linear progression pattern, or what they describe as a “zig-zag” pattern, relay an element of evaluativeness. A continuous Theme pattern, on the other hand, relays non-evaluativeness and is considered to be compatible with expository texts. The analysis of Theme-Rheme development in the data suggests that the English news reports tend to be evaluative, whereas the Arabic news reports tend to be neutral.

In terms of macrostructure, the analysis of global topics, macropropositions and news headlines reveals different political and ideological representations of Syria and its role in relation to the recent assassinations in Lebanon. The English news reports focus on the “growing evidence in Hariri’s murder investigation” and present this in their headlines. The Arabic news reports focus instead on “Syria’s cooperation” as a macroproposition and global theme. The analysis of the English news reports reveals a

strong implication of Syria as perpetrator of the recent crimes, a representation which is different from that in the Arabic reports.

The analysis of the thematic structures in the second and third groups of the data reveals that:

- *Syria Times*, SANA and Al-Manar news media emphasise “Syria’s cooperation” and describe it as “satisfactory”. Syria’s “cooperation” is presented as New information in news headlines, and in Rheme positions of main clauses in these reports
- Al-Jazeera, *Alarab*, BBC and CNN news media emphasise the “growing evidence” and the “fresh leads”, which implicate Syria in Hariri’s murder. These elements are presented as New information in news headlines and Theme-Rheme structures of the English and Arabic reports
- the English news reports present the “accusation” against Syria and its “cooperation” mostly as New information in unmarked thematic structures in the data
- the Arabic news reports present the “accusation” against Syria and the “evidence” against it mostly as background information in marked and unmarked thematic structures. They are described as “mere allegations” by the US government. The Arabic news reports also emphasise Syria’s “cooperation” with the UN team and present it as New information in Arabic news headlines

The English and Arabic news reports focus thematically and informationally on different elements and different aspects of presenting Syria in relation to the recent assassinations in Lebanon. The organization and selection of Themes and Rhemes, the informational focus at the local and global levels of discourse, the emphasis, repetition and management/concealment of information in these reports are indications of the media’s exercise of power and the use of persuasive techniques to influence the readers’ opinion. The analytical methods and tools carried out here reveal the different social realities and ideological representations of Syria in these reports. The English news reports, with the exception of SANA, *Syria Times* and Al-Manar, strengthen the belief that Syria is behind the Lebanese assassinations, whereas the Arabic news reports de-emphasise this belief and present Syria as cooperative and a victim of the US alleged accusations.

The thematic and informational analysis of the various lexical terms used to describe Lebanese politicians who openly criticize Syria and the implications of these terms is carried out in marked and unmarked thematic structures in the data. The analysis reveals that the English news reports tend to emphasise “anti-Syria(n)” in news headlines and present it as New information in Theme positions. The Arabic news reports focus instead on (munaahiD li suryaa), which implies less negativity than (munaawi’) and (mu’aady) (see section 5.3.1). The English-language term, “anti-Syria”, is the most frequent term in the data. “Anti-Syria(n) is used 82 times in the English news reports. (MunaahiD li suryaa) is used 34 times in the Arabic news reports. The analysis of lexical variations and their implications reveals ideological differences in the presentation of Syria in the English and Arabic reports. On the one hand, the English news reports tend to emphasise Syria’s implication in the Lebanese assassinations and present Syria as a threat to and an enemy of Lebanon. The Arabic news reports, on the other hand, present the Syria-Lebanon relationship in terms of having different political views rather than being enemies.

In terms of the analysis of the nine nominal lexicalizations, which describe the Syria-Lebanon relationship and the death of Lebanese politicians, the following have been found:

- the “accusation” against Syria is presented as Given information in Theme positions, while Syria’s “cooperation” is emphasised as New elements in Rheme positions in the Arabic news reports. Syria’s “cooperation” is described as “satisfactory” and is “appreciated” by the UN team, which are also emphasised as New information
- the English news reports tend to present the “accusation” against Syria mostly as New information in Rheme position. Syria’s cooperation, which is presented mostly as New information, is described as a slow paced process and “an important component of the ongoing work” of the UN investigation team
- the English news reports use a nominal overlexicalization, “slaying”, as New information in Theme positions of main clauses. “Slaying” is not used in the Arabic news reports. The use of this term implies an element of evaluation in the English news reports
- the English news reports use the nominals, “attack” and “bombing”, both as New information in Theme and Rheme positions more than the Arabic news reports. These terms strongly infer a human agent causing the death of the

Lebanese politicians. In other words, the English news reports tend to emphasise human agency responsible for the killings in Lebanon

- nominalizations as marked Themes are more frequently used in the Arabic reports than in the English ones

The analysis of nominalizations reveals a tendency in the English news reports towards thematization of nominalization in unmarked thematic structures. The English news reports tend to present the selected nominalizations as thematically significant. The English news reports also emphasise nominalizations which strongly infer human agency causing the death of the Lebanese politicians. The connections between the death, the cause of the death and the attributions of responsibility for the death of the Lebanese politicians are much stronger in the English news reports than in the Arabic ones. The bomber is described as someone who is not from Lebanon. The Arabic news reports, on the other hand, tend to use a very large number of nominal lexicalizations as Rhemes, or part of Rhemes, presenting Given information in main clauses in the data. The findings reveal that the Arabic news reports avoid attributing responsibility and causality in describing Syria and the death of the Lebanese politicians.

To sum up, the enhanced conceptual framework proves in practice to be a meaningful resource to identify the different ideological representations of Syria in the selected data. The roles of discourse in constructing social meanings and realities, the roles of readers as subject and reading positions, the structural model for news reports analysis, the roles of news media and the use of various persuasive techniques (e.g. emphasis, repetition, rationalization, habitualization, naturalization and management/concealment of information) are indicators of underlying ideologies in news presentation. The developed methodological approach to Theme/Rheme analysis in English and Arabic and the enhanced analytical tools used here also proves in practice to unravel the ideological differences in English and Arabic news reports. The findings of the thematic and informational analyses in the data strongly suggest that the perpetuation of conflict and the polarization between Syria, on the one hand, and Lebanon and the US, on the other, are more apparent in the English news reports than in the Arabic ones. The Arabic news reports show a tendency towards neutralization and presenting Syria positively in their reports. Persuasive techniques are used in both the English and Arabic news reports in order to influence the readers into adopting the media's political views, ideologies and representations of Syria in this conflict.

6.3 Original Contribution

Although many studies have been conducted in the fields of ideology and news discourse, very few have attempted to investigate the roles of Themes and Rhemes in marked and unmarked thematic structures in English and Arabic news reports. Most Arab scholars analyse Themes and Rhemes, or *mubtada'* and *khavar*, in Arabic discourse by applying the Traditional Arab Grammarians' approach. TAG allows only for the analysis of one type of clause, namely Nominal clauses in terms of Theme and Rheme (see section 3.5). Very few modern Arab scholars have attempted the Functional Sentence Perspective approach to analyse both Nominal and Verbal clauses in Arabic (section 3.6). According to them, sentence elements which convey old information are always Themes, whereas elements which convey New information are Rhemes. There have been no attempts, before now, to empirically investigate Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic news reports. This study is, therefore, the first attempt

- to apply Halliday's approach to Theme-Rheme analysis in Arabic Verbal and Nominal clauses
- to develop Halliday's approach to analyse thematic structures in English and Arabic news reports
- to compare Theme-Rheme patterns in a selected corpus of English and Arabic news reports in an attempt to help elucidate underlying ideologies

Chapter four presents the application of Halliday's model to news discourse in Arabic, a verb-initial language. Verbal clauses are considered the basis of expression in Arabic and the most common type in Arabic news discourse. Verb-Subject-Complement represents the most common word order and the unmarked sequence in Arabic news discourse. According to Halliday's definition, the Topical element which comes first in the clause is the Theme. This suggests that the initial verbal element functions as the Theme in Arabic news discourse. However, Chapter four argues that in order to carry out a comparative study of Themes and Rhemes in English and Arabic news reports, thematic elements should also be comparable and belong to the same word class, i.e. nouns (see section 4.3). Moreover, the analysis of thematic patterns, thematization and nominalization will present certain challenges, if verbs alone are considered as unmarked Themes in Arabic news discourse. Verbs alone do not frequently form coherent thematic patterns. Verbs as Themes do not form hyperthemes because they

cannot be derived from other verbs. Moreover, they do not easily form a simple linear pattern. The Rheme of a previous clause does not necessarily become the Theme, verb, of the next clause. In addition, nominalizations will not function as unmarked Themes in Arabic news discourse, but only as Rhemes, or part of Rhemes, and less frequently as marked Themes. This study has taken a tentative first step to consider and analyse the initial verb and the following noun as the unmarked Theme in Arabic news discourse. Nominal clauses are considered marked along with Complement- and Adjunct-initial clauses in Arabic news reports. Moreover, this study designs a multi-disciplinary conceptual model which incorporates the different disciplines of Discourse Analysis, Critical Discourse Analysis, the socio-cognitive theory and Systemic Functional Linguistics in order to interpret the social, political and ideological meanings in news discourse.

6.4 Indications for Further Research

In this study, our concern has been to investigate ideological representations of Syria in mainstream English and Arabic news media reports by analysing, comparing and contrasting Theme-Rheme structures and Given-New information. The designed conceptual model and the enhanced methods and tools applied to the analysis of the data have proved in practice to unravel the social and ideological representations of the political event and the social subject under investigation. The selected corpus forms a specific genre, written political discourse, and a specific text type, exposition. The present corpus could be enlarged so as to comprise other text types and/or genres. The analysis of Theme-Rheme development and organization in argumentative political texts, such as editorials, can provide a better understanding of ideology in news presentation and the way English and Arabic news texts differ in this respect. The study can be taken further so as to comprise other genres in Arabic and/or English. The theoretical model, methods and tools which are developed here can be empirically investigated in legal, scientific and literary texts. The analysis of news stories and short stories in Arabic and English, for example, will provide a further insight into underlying thematic patterns and Theme-Rheme organizations in English and Arabic texts. Another way forward would also be to explore the developed model and tools in translated, literary or non-literary, English and Arabic texts. By analysing translations, it would be possible to examine the different ideological and linguistic implications associated with language use and translation.

The developed model, analytical tools and methods can also be applied to the same genre, but in different languages. By conducting a study of news discourse in Arabic, English and French, for example, it would be possible to gain an insight into the way languages differ in presenting the news. The findings in the current research could be compared with similar research on news reports in verb-initial languages, such as Spanish, Chinese, or Japanese. Comparative research in Arabic and other verb-initial languages would provide a better understanding of the roles of verbal elements as Themes or Rhemes in marked and unmarked thematic structures in news discourse.

Research could be conducted on different news media and outlets, such as regional newspapers or local television. By conducting a research on news media which target specific audiences and operate mainly at a regional level, it would be possible to investigate the real ideological implications and the different expectations related to the presentation of news discourse. Moreover, the selected corpus focuses mainly on mainstream news media reporting on the assassinations in Lebanon and the implication of Syria in these crimes. By choosing a different topic and focusing on other linguistic implications, it would be possible to confirm or de-validate the findings related to the representations of Syria in the current study. Another area worthy of investigation is the effects of imagery and the captions provided with the news text. This area has been the focus of some Critical Discourse analysts, such as Kress and van Leeuwen. The analysis of visual effects in the Arabic news text, in particular, has been slightly neglected in the study of ideology and news discourse.

Finally, the richness of analytical toolkits and methods cannot be exhausted. Another way forward would be to further explore the macrostructure and the superstructure of news discourse. The investigation of notions, such as macropropositions and global Themes, in a larger body of data would provide a full picture of the different views and ideologies adopted in news presentation in English and Arabic reports.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX A:

References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 1: Titles, Size, Sources and Dates

Group 1: The Assassination of Gibran Tueni

Numbers of Articles: 20

Total word count: 11547

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|---|------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 | Syria condemns east Beirut blast, lashes out at slander campaign | 317 | <i>Syria Times</i> , 13/12/2005 |
| 2 | Gibran Tueni assassinated by car bomb | 574 | NBN, 13/12/2005 |
| 3 | Lebanon blast kills anti-Syrian lawmaker | 832 | Al-Jazeera, 12/12/2005 |
| 4 | Beirut car bomb kills anti-Syrian MP | 776 | <i>Alarab</i> , 12/12/2005 |
| 5 | Beirut Bomb kills anti-Syrian MP | 700 | BBC News , 12/12/2005 |
| 6 | Lebanon mourns slain anti-Syria newspaper magnate | 770 | Reuters, 13/12/2005 |
| 7 | Christian MP Tueni targeted in Beirut blast | 72 | AFP 1, 12/12/2005 |
| 8 | Anti-Syrian MP slain in Beirut car bombing | 758 | AFP 2, 12/12/2005 |
| 9 | Lebanon seeks international probe into killings | 912 | CNN 1, 13/12/2005 |
| 10 | Beirut blast kills anti-Syria MP | 675 | CNN 2, 14/12/2005 |
| 11 | سوريا تدين حادثه اغتيال جبران تويني..مصدر إعلامي: من يتهم سوريا يكمل عمل المجرمين و ما صدر عن البعض هو إمعان بتوتير العلاقة السورية-اللبنانية | 927 | <i>Teshreen</i> , 13/12/2005 |
| 12 | استشهاد النائب اللبناني رئيس مجلس إدارة صحيفة "النهار" جبران تويني | 320 | NBN, 12/12/2005 |
| 13 | مطالب لبنانية بمحكمة دولية تحقق في اغتيال تويني | 476 | Al-Jazeera, 12/12/2005 |
| 14 | دمشق تدين و تشكك في توقيت الجريمة | 677 | <i>Alarab</i> , 12/12/2005 |
| 15 | تشيع حاشد للنائب المعارض جبران تويني في بيروت | 512 | BBC Arabic, 12/12/2005 |
| 16 | لبنان يعي جبران تويني و بعض اللبنانيين بتهمون سوريا | 556 | Reuters, 13/12/2005 |
| 17 | مقتل النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في اعتداء | 213 | AFP 1, 12/12/2005 |
| 18 | اغتيال النائب اللبناني جبران تويني في انفجار سيارة مفخخة | 578 | AFP 2, 12/12/2005 |
| 19 | الحكومة اللبنانية ستطالب بتحقيق دولي في الاغتيالات | 536 | CNN 1, 13/12/2005 |
| 20 | مقتل النائب والإعلامي جبران تويني بانفجار بضواحي بيروت | 391 | CNN 2, 11/01/2006 |

Table 7.1 The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Tueni

APPENDIX B:

References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 2: Titles, Size, Sources and Dates

Group 2: Hariri's murder probe

Number of articles: 14

Total word count: 4010

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|---|------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 | Syria's cooperation appreciated | 90 | <i>Syria Times</i> , 26/09/2006 |
| 2 | Syria's cooperation with the International Investigation Committee satisfactory, Brammertz says | 213 | SANA, 26/09/2006 |
| 3 | UN probe report details fresh evidence on Hariri murder | 264 | Al-Manar, 26/09/2006 |
| 4 | Hariri inquiry confirms suicide bomb | 377 | Al-Jazeera, 26/09/2006 |
| 5 | Hariri murder probe nearer to trial | 474 | <i>Alarab</i> , 26/09/2006 |
| 6 | Hariri 'killed by suicide bomber' | 310 | BBC, 25/09/2006 |
| 7 | U.N.: New leads in Hariri probe | 418 | CNN, 25/09/2006 |
| 8 | براميرتس سلم تقريره إلى عنان: المساعدات السورية كانت مرضية | 178 | <i>Teshreen</i> , 25/09/2006 |
| 9 | براميرتس يؤكد أن المساعدة التي تلقتها لجنته من سورية كانت مرضية | | SANA, 25/09/2006 |
| 10 | براميرتس يعتبر تعاون سوريا مرض و يرجح استخدام 1800 كلف من المتفجرات في العملية | 427 | Al-Manar, 26/09/2006 |
| 11 | سوريا تصف تقرير براميرتس بالإيجابي | 291 | Al-Jazeera, 27/09/2006 |
| 12 | المحقق الدولي يثنى على تعاون سوريا | 548 | <i>Alarab</i> , 26/09/2006 |
| 13 | "انتحاري" قتل الحريري | 222 | BBC, 26/09/2006 |
| 14 | عنان يتسلم تقريراً جديداً من براميرتس حول اغتيال الحريري | 411 | CNN, 25/09/2006 |

Table 7.2 The Selected News Reports on Hariri's Murder Probe

APPENDIX C:

References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 3: Titles, Size, Sources and Dates

Group 3: The US Accusations against Syria

Number of articles: 20

Total word count: 9990

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|--|------------|------------------------|
| 1 | Speaker of Lebanese People's Assembly criticizes the American White House statement on Lebanon | 122 | SANA, 02/11/2006 |
| 2 | Bolton Faults Syria, Iran on Lebanon | 697 | Syria news, 02/11/2006 |
| 3 | Washington warns of 'mounting evidence' of bid to bring down Siniora Cabinet | 975 | NBN, 02/11/2006 |
| 4 | US sees signs of "plan to topple Lebanon government" | | Al-Manar 01/11/2006 |
| 5 | US: Iran and Syria in Beirut plot | 461 | Al-Jazeera, 01/11/2006 |
| 6 | Syria says US accusations "pure vilification" | 362 | Alarab, 02/11/2006 |
| 7 | US issues Lebanon 'plot' warning | 362 | BBC, 02/11/2006 |
| 8 | Syria and Iran dismiss U.S. accusation on Lebanon | 181 | Reuters, 02/11/2006 |
| 9 | Syria rejects US charge of seeking to undermine Lebanon | 278 | AFP, 02/11/2006 |
| 10 | U.S. sees evidence of plot to topple Lebanese government | 438 | CNN, 02/11/2006 |
| 11 | السفير اعلان الدعم الامريكى لن يفيد اى لبنانى | 386 | SANA, 02/11/2006 |
| 12 | سوريا تنتقد بشدة الاتهامات الاميركية وتصف سياستها في المنطقة بالـ " تافهة " | 228 | Syria News, 02/11/2006 |
| 13 | دمشق ترفض < الاتهامات الاميركية السخيفة > وتنفي تدخلها في لبنان | 1699 | NBN, 02/11/2006 |
| 14 | دعم أمريكي لحكومة السنيورة و مواقف تعتبر عملية غزة هروبا من الهزيمة في لبنان | 468 | Al-Manar, 02/11/2006 |
| 15 | تحذير أمريكي لبناني من الإطاحة بحكومة السنيورة | 622 | Al-Jazeera, 03/11/2006 |
| 16 | إسرائيل تساوم المجتمع الدولي بانتهاك سيادة لبنان | 534 | Alarab, 03/11/2006 |
| 17 | سورية: يجب على أمريكا الا تلوم الآخرين على أخطائها | 550 | BBC, 02/11/2006 |
| 18 | سوريا: الاتهامات الاميركية بشأن لبنان " محض افتراء " | 484 | Reuters, 02/11/2006 |
| 19 | سوريا تنفي ان تكون تريد زعزعة الاستقرار في لبنان | 472 | AFP, 02/11/2006 |
| 20 | سوريا تنفي اتهامات أمريكية بدعم "إنقلاب" ضد الحكومة اللبنانية | 556 | CNN, 02/11/2006 |

Table 7.3 The Selected News Reports on the US Accusations against Syria

APPENDIX D:

References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 4: Titles, Size, Sources and Dates

Group 4: The Assassination of Pierre Gemayel

Numbers of articles: 24

Total word count: 13639

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|--|------------|------------------------|
| 1 | Lebanese personalities criticize Jumblat's role | 187 | SANA, 23/11/2006 |
| 2 | Syria's Demands, Hezbollah's Mistakes | 604 | Syria news, 22/11/2006 |
| 3 | Beirut crowds gathering | 385 | NBN, 23/11/2006 |
| 4 | Lebanese Industry Minister Pierre Gemayel assassinated in Beirut's northern suburb | 334 | Al-Manar, 23/11/2006 |
| 5 | Lebanon begins day of mourning | 397 | Al-Jazeera, 23/11/2006 |
| 6 | Lebanese gather for Gemayel's funeral | 521 | Alarab, 23/11/2006 |
| 7 | Thousands attend Beirut funeral | 489 | BBC, 23/11/2006 |
| 8 | Thousands of Lebanese mourn Gemayel | 548 | Reuters 1, 23/11/2006 |
| 9 | Bolton says Lebanon's future at stake | 423 | Reuters 2, 25/11/2006 |
| 10 | Lebanon prepares to lay to rest slain minister | 734 | AFP 1, 23/11/2006 |
| 11 | Amin Gemayel suspects Syria in son's murder | 107 | AFP 2, 22/11/2006 |
| 12 | Scores expected for slain Lebanon minister's funeral | 911 | CNN, 23/11/2006 |
| 13 | حزبان لبنانيان يستنكران تصريحات جنبلاط ويصفانه بأنه رجل الفتنة في لبنان | 535 | SANA, 22/11/2006 |
| 14 | لبنان يطالب الأمم المتحدة بتوسيع عمل لجنة التحقيق ليشمل اغتيال الجميل الاخبار السياسية | 219 | Syria news, 22/11/2006 |
| 15 | حشود من كل لبنان تندفق الى بيروت لوداع الشهيد الجميل | 938 | NBN, 23/11/2006 |
| 16 | تشجيع الجميل في بيروت وحشد شعبي يخيب امال قوى السلطة والخطباء يتهمون على المعارضة ويطلبون برحيل لحود | 208 | Al-Manar, 23/11/2006 |
| 17 | ببريز يؤيد السنيورة واللبنانيون يشيعون الجميل | 422 | Al-Jazeera, 23/11/2006 |
| 18 | مجلس الأمن يضم الجريمة الجديدة إلى ملف الحريري عشرات الآلاف يحتشدون في بيروت لتشيع بيار الجميل | 482 | Alarab, 23/11/2006 |
| 19 | تشيع بيار الجميل في مآتم شعبي ببيروت | 895 | BBC, 23/11/2006 |
| 20 | الاف اللبنانيين يتدفقون للمشاركة في تشيع بيار الجميل | 567 | Reuters 1, 23/11/2006 |
| 21 | الحكومة اللبنانية تقر المحكمة الدولية في اغتيال الحريري | 290 | Reuters 2, 25/11/2006 |
| 22 | بدء مآتم الوزير اللبناني بيار الجميل | 468 | AFP 1, 23/11/2006 |
| 23 | امين الجميل: الرئيس اللبناني هو "الطابور الخامس" السوري | 497 | AFP 2, 23/11/2006 |
| 24 | لبنان.. الأغلبية والمعارضة وجهاً لوجه في جنازة الجميل | 567 | CNN, 32/11/2006 |

Table 7.4 The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Gemayel

APPENDIX E:

References of the English and Arabic News Reports in Group 5: Titles, Size, Sources and Dates

Group 5: The assassination of Walid Eido

Numbers of articles: 22

Total word count: 12953

| | The Title of the News Report | Word Count | Source, Date |
|----|--|------------|------------------------|
| 1 | Syria condemns assassination of Eido and campaigns of lies against her | 175 | SANA, 14/06/2007 |
| 2 | Lebanese lawmaker killed | 765 | Syria news, 14/06/2007 |
| 3 | March 14 MP Walid Eido assassinated in Beirut bombing | 1462 | NBN, 14/06/307 |
| 4 | MP Walid Ido assassinated in Beirut bombing | 408 | Al-Manar, 13/06/2007 |
| 5 | Beirut holds funeral for slain MP | 818 | Al-Jazeera, 14/06/2007 |
| 6 | Lebanon mourns slain anti-Syrian leader | 505 | Alarab, 14/06/2007 |
| 7 | Anti-Syrian MP mourned in Lebanon | 411 | BBC, 14/06/2007 |
| 8 | Lebanon to bury anti-Syrian MP killed by car bomb | 443 | Reuters 1, 14/06/2007 |
| 9 | Anti-Syrians bury slain Lebanese MP, blame Damascus | 518 | Reuters 2, 14/06/2007 |
| 10 | Mourners lash out at Syria at Lebanon MP's funeral | 720 | AFP, 14/06/2007 |
| 11 | Lebanese lawmaker killed in Beirut | 590 | CNN, 13/06/2007 |
| 12 | مصدر مسؤول في وزارة الخارجية يدين جريمة التفجير التي أودت بحياة عيدو ويستهن حملات الافتراء والتضليل ضد سورية | 203 | SANA, 14/06/2007 |
| 13 | اغتيال النائب اللبناني وليد عيدو ونواب في "14 آذار" يتهمون سورية | 409 | Syria news, 13/06/2007 |
| 14 | اغتيال النائب وليد عيدو ونجله في قلب بيروت | 871 | NBN, 14/06/2007 |
| 15 | اغتيال النائب وليد عيدو في انفجار بمنطقة الروشة | 403 | Al-Manar, 13/06/2007 |
| 16 | تشيع النائب عيدو ببيروت وسط هتافات مناهضة لسوريا | 491 | Al-Jazeera, 14/06/2007 |
| 17 | بيروت تشيع النائب وليد عيدو سوريا تدين حادثة الاغتيال و تستغرب اتهامها بالجريمة | 659 | Alarab, 14/06/2007 |
| 18 | تشيع وليد عيدو في بيروت | 709 | BBC, 14/06/2007 |
| 19 | مقتل عشرة بينهم نائب معارض لسوريا في انفجار ببيروت | 772 | Reuters 1, 14/06/2007 |
| 20 | مناهضون لسوريا يشيعون نائبا لبنانيا ويتهمون دمشق | 504 | Reuters 2, 14/06/2007 |
| 21 | النائب وليد عيدو شيع في ماتم شعبي على وقع هتافات مناهضة لسوريا | 618 | AFP, 14/06/2007 |
| 22 | مقتل النائب اللبناني وليد عيدو في تفجير غربي بيروت | 419 | CNN, 13/06/2007 |

Table 7.5 The Selected News Reports on the Assassination of Eido

APPENDIX F:

The Qalam Transliteration Methodology Used Throughout the Study²²³

| Consonants: | |
|------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| The English pictograph | Description |
| ' | أ voiceless glottal stop |
| b | ب voiced bilabial stop |
| t | ت voiceless alveolar stop |
| th | ث voiceless interdental fricative |
| j | ج voiced palato-alveolar fricative |
| H | ح voiceless pharyngeal fricative |
| kh | خ voiceless velar fricative |
| d | د voiced alveolar stop |
| dh | ذ voiced interdental fricative |
| r | ر voiced alveolar retroflex |
| z | ز voiced alveolar fricative |
| s | س voiceless alveolar fricative |
| sh | ش voiceless palato-alveolar fricative |
| S | ص voiceless pharyngealized fricative |
| D | ض pharyngealized palato-alveolar stop |
| T | ط voiceless palato-alveolar stop |
| Z | ظ pharyngealized alveolar stop |
| ' | ع voiced pharyngeal fricative |
| gh | غ voiced velar fricative |
| f | ف voiceless labio-dental fricative |
| q | ق voiceless pharyngealized fricative |
| k | ك voiceless velar stop |
| l | ل voiced lateral |
| m | م bilabial nasal |
| n | ن alveolar nasal |
| h | ه voiceless glottal fricative |
| w | و voiced labio-velar glide |
| y | ي voiced palatal glide |

| Vowels: | | |
|-----------------|------------------|--------------------|
| <i>Short</i> | <i>Long</i> | <i>Description</i> |
| <i>a</i> | <i>aa</i> | low central vowel |
| <i>i</i> | | high front vowel |
| <i>u</i> | | high back vowel |

²²³ The Qalam system was created by Abdelsalam Heddaya with contributions from Walid Hamdy and M. Hashem Sherif. See <http://langs.eserver.org/qalam.txt>.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- عبدو، د. (1983) "البنية الداخلية للجملة الفعلية في العربية". *البعث*، 31، 37-54.
Abdu, D. (1983) "The internal structure of the verbal sentence in Arabic". *Al-Baath*, 31, 37-54.
- Abdul-Raof, H. (1998) *Subject, Theme, and Agent in Modern Standard Arabic*. London: Routledge.
- Abu-Ghazaleh, I. N. (1983) "Theme and the function of the verb in Palestinian Arabic narrative discourse". Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Florida.
- Abu-Mansour, A. H (1982) "The traditional treatment of theme, rheme, and focus in modern standard Arabic: a functional reinterpretation". Unpublished MA thesis, University of Florida.
- Abu-Mansour, A. H. (1986) "A functional analysis of sentence structure in standard Arabic: a three-level approach". Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Florida.
- أبو زيد، ف. *الصحافة العربية المهاجرة*. القاهرة: عالم الكتب.
Abu Zeid, F. (1993) *The Migrant Arab Press*. Cairo: 'Aalam Alkutub.
- Adjémian, C. (1978) "Theme, rheme and word order: from Weil to present-day theories". *Historiographia Linguistica*, 3, 253-273.
- Aitchison, J. (1992) *The Articulate Mammal. An Introduction to Psycholinguistics*. Third Edition. London: Routledge.
- Alarcos Llorach, E. (1994) *Gramática de la Lengua Española*. Madrid: Editorial Espasa Calpe, S.A.
- الجارم، أ. ع. (1953) "الجملة الفعلية أساس التعبير في اللغة العربية". *مجمع اللغة العربية*، مجلة 7، مطبعة وزارة المعارف العمومية: مصر.
Al-Jarim, A. A. (1953) "The verbal sentence is the basis of expression in Arabic". *The Academy of the Arabic Language*, 7, 347-350.

المخزومي، م. (1964) *في النحو العربي: نقد وتوجيه*. بيروت: المكتبة العصرية.
Al-Makhzumi, M. (1964) *In Arabic Syntax: Criticism and Guidance*. Beirut: The Modern Library.

Anderson, A. R. and Belnap, N. D. (1975) *Entailment. The Logic of Relevance and Necessity*. Princeton, N. J: Princeton University Press.

Austin, J. L. (1962) *How to Do Things with Words*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Aziz, Y. Y. (1988) "Theme-rheme organization and paragraph structure in standard Arabic". *Word*, 39 (2), 117-128.

Bach, K. and Harnish, R. (1979) *Linguistic Communication and Speech Acts*. Cambridge Mass: MIT Press.

Baker, M. (1992) *In Other Words: A Course Book on Translation*. London: Routledge.

Bateson, M. C. (1967) *Arabic Language Handbook*. Washington: Centre for Applied Linguistics.

Bazzi, S. (2009) *Arab News and Conflict: A Multidisciplinary Discourse Study*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Beaugrande, R. De and Dressler, W. (1981) *Introduction to Text Linguistics*. London: Longman.

Bednarek, M. (2006) *Evaluation in Media Discourse: Analysis of a Newspaper Corpus*. London: Continuum.

Beeston, A. F. L. (1970) *The Arabic Language Today*. London: Hutchinson and Co.

Bell, A. (1984) "Language style as audience design". *Language in Society*, 13 (2), 145-204.

Bell, A. (1991) *The Language of News Media*. Oxford: Blackwell.

- Bell, A. and Garrett, P. (eds.) (1998) *Approaches to Media Discourse*. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Berger, P. L. and Luckmann, T. (1967) *The Social Construction of Reality*. London: Penguin.
- Berry, M. (1975) *An Introduction to Systemic Linguistics: 1. Structures and Systems*. London: B. T. Batsford Ltd.
- Berry, M. (1977) *An Introduction to Systemic Linguistics: 2. Levels and Links*. London: B. T. Batsford Ltd.
- Biber, D. (1989) "A typology of English texts". *Linguistics*, 27, 3-43.
- Biber, D. (1993) "Representativeness in corpus design". *Literary and Linguistic Computing*, 8 (4), 243-257.
- Breen, J. M. (2007) "Mass media and new media technologies". In E. Devereux (ed.) *Media Studies: Key Issues and Debates*. London: Sage.
- Brekke, H. (1989) "War with words". In R. Wodak (ed.) *Language, Power and Ideology: Studies in Political Discourse*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Brown, G. and Yule, G. (1983) *Discourse Analysis*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Caffarel, A. (2006) *A Systemic Functional Grammar of French: From Grammar to Discourse*. London: Continuum.
- Caldas-Coulthard, C.R. and Coulthard, M. (eds.) (1996) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.
- Calzada Perez, M. (ed.) (2003) *Apropos of Ideology: Translation Studies on Ideology - Ideologies in Translation Studies*. Manchester: St. Jerome.

Cantarino, V. (1974) *Syntax of Modern Arabic Prose. Volume 1: The Simple Sentence*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Chafe, W. L. (1974) "Language and consciousness". *Language*, 50, 111-133.

Chafe, W. L. (1976) "Givenness, contrastiveness, definiteness, subjects, topics and point of view". In C. N. Li (ed.) *Subject and Topic*. London: Academic Press.

Chilton, P. and Schäffner, C. (1997) "Discourse and politics". In T. A. van Dijk (ed.) *Discourse Studies: A Multidisciplinary Introduction. Volume 2: Discourse as Social Interaction*. London: Sage.

Chomsky, N. (1981) *Radical Priorities*. Montreal: Black Rose Books.

Chomsky, N. (2002) *Media Control: The Spectacular Achievement of Propaganda*. Second Edition. New York: Seven Stories Press.

Clark, H. and Carlson, T. B. (1982) "Hearers and speech acts". *Language*, 58 (2), 332-373.

Collins, P. C. (1991) *Cleft and Pseudo-Cleft Constructions in English*. London: Routledge.

Conboy, M. (2007) *Language of the News*. London: Routledge.

Contreras, H. (1976) *A Theory of Word Order with Special Reference to Spanish*. Amsterdam: North-Holland.

Daneš, F. (1964) "A three-level approach to syntax". *TLP*, 1, 225-240.

Daneš, F. (1974) "Functional sentence perspective and the organisation of the text". In F. Daneš (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. The Hague: Mouton.

Daneš, F. (ed.) (1974) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. The Hague: Mouton.

- Fairclough, N. (1985) "Critical and descriptive goals in discourse analysis". *Journal of Pragmatics*, 9 (6), 739-763.
- Fairclough, N. (1992) *Discourse and Social Change*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
- Fairclough, N. (1995a) *Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Longman.
- Fairclough, N. (1995b) *Media Discourse*. London: Arnold.
- Fairclough, N. (1996) "Technologisation of discourse". In C. R. Caldas-Coulthard and M. Coulthard (eds.) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.
- Fairclough, N. (2001) *Language and Power*. Second Edition. London: Longman.
- Fairclough, N. (2003) *Analysing Discourse: Textual Analysis of Social Research*. London: Routledge.
- Fairclough, N. and Wodak, R. (1997) "Critical discourse analysis". In T. van Dijk (ed.) *Discourse as Social Interaction Discourse Studies: A Multidisciplinary Introduction. Volume 2*. London: Sage.
- Ferguson, C. A. (1959) "Diglossia". *Word*, 15, 325-340.
- Fetzer, A. and Lauerbach, G. E. (eds.) (2007) *Political Discourse in the Media: Cross-Cultural Perspective*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Firbas, J. (1966) "On defining the theme in functional sentence analysis". *Travaux Linguistiques de Prague*, 1, 267- 280.
- Firbas, J. (1974) "Some aspects of the Czechoslovak approach to problems of functional sentence perspective". In F. Daneš (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. The Hague: Mouton.

Fischer, A. et al. (eds.) (2002) *Text Types and Corpora: Studies in Honour of Udo Fries*. Tübingen: Gunter Narr.

Fish, S. (1981) "What is stylistics and why are they saying such terrible things about it?" in D. Freeman (ed.) *Essays in Modern Stylistics*. London: Methuen.

Fowler, R. (1991) *Language in the News: Discourse and Ideology in the Press*. London: Routledge.

Fowler, R. (1996a) *Linguistic Criticism*. Second Edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Fowler, R. (1996b) "On critical linguistics". In C.R. Caldas-Coulthard and M. Coulthard (eds.) *Texts and Practices. Reading in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.

Fowler, R. et al. (1979) *Language and Control*. London: Routledge.

Francis, H. (1966) "Review of Brno Studies in English". *Language*, 42 (4) 142-149.

Fries, P. H. (1981) "On the status of theme in English: arguments from discourse". *Forum Linguisticum*, 6, 1-38.

Fries, P. H. (1983) "On the status of theme in English: arguments from discourse". In J. S. Petöfi and E. Sözer (eds.) *Micro and Macro Connexity of Texts*. Hamburg: Helmut Buske.

Fries, P. H. (1995) "A personal view of theme". In M. Ghadessy (ed.) *Thematic Development in English Texts*. London: Pinter.

Gaballa, H. (1986) "Case-marking and classical Arabic: a semantic and historiographic study". Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Delaware.

Galtung, J. and Ruge, M. H. (1965) "The structure of foreign news". *Journal of Peace Research*, 2 (1): 64-91.

- Garzone, G. and Sarangi, S. (eds.) (2007) *Discourse, Ideology and Specialized Communication*. Oxford: Peter Lang.
- Ghadessy, M. (1993) "Thematic development and structural elements". *Occasional Papers in Systemic Linguistics*, 7, 1-25.
- Ghadessy, M. (ed.) (1995) *Thematic Development in English Texts*. London: Pinter.
- Giles, H. and Powesland, P. F. (1975) *Speech Style and Social Evaluation*. London: Academic Press.
- Goffman, E. (1974) *Frame Analysis*. New York: Harper and Row.
- Gramsci, A. (1975) *Letters from Prison*. London: Jonathan Cape.
- Greenbaum, S. and Quirk, R. (1990) *A Student Grammar of the English Language*. London: Longman.
- Grice, H. P. (1975) "Logic and conversation". In P. Cole and J. Morgan (eds.) *Syntax and Semantics. Volume 3: Speech Acts*. New York: Academic Press.
- Hall, S. (1973) "The determination of news photographs". In S. Cohen and J. Young (eds.) *Working Papers in Cultural Studies*. London: Constable.
- Hall, S. (1996) "The problem of ideology: Marxism without guarantee". In D. Morley and K. H. Chen (eds.) *Critical Dialogues in Cultural Studies*. London: Routledge
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1967) "Notes on transitivity and theme in English. Part 2". *Journal of Linguistics*, 3, 199-244.
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1970) "Language structure and language function". In J. Lyons (ed.) *New Horizons in Linguistics*. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

Halliday, M. A. K. (1971) "Linguistic function and literary style: an inquiry into the language of William Golding's *The Inheritors*". In S. Chatman (ed.) *Literary Style: A Symposium*. London: Oxford University Press.

Halliday, M. A. K. (1974) "The place of functional sentence perspective in the system of linguistic description". In F. Daneš (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. The Hague: Mouton.

Halliday, M. A. K. (1976) "Theme and information in the English clause". In G. Kress (ed.) *Halliday: System and Function in Language*. London: Oxford University Press.

Halliday, M. A. K. (1978) *Language as Social Semiotic: The Social Interpretation of Language and Meaning*. London: Arnold.

Halliday, M. A. K. (2004) *An Introduction to Functional Grammar*. Third Edition. London: Arnold.

Halliday, M. A. K. et al. (1964) *The Linguistic Sciences and Language Teaching*. London: Longman.

Halliday, M. A. K. and Hasan, R. (1976) *Cohesion in English*. London: Longman.

Halliday, M. A. K. and Hasan, R. (1986) *Language, Context and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social-Semiotic Perspective*. Victoria: Deakin University Press.

Harré, R. (1985) "Persuasion and manipulation". In T. A. van Dijk (ed.) *Discourse and Communication*. Berlin: Walter De Gruyter.

Hartley, J. (1982) *Understanding News*. London: Methuen.

Hasan, R. and Fries, P. H. (eds.) (1995) *On Subject and Theme*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Hatcher, A. G. (1956) *Theme and Underlying Question: Two Studies of Spanish Word Order*. New York: Linguistic Circle of New York.

Hatim, B. (1987) "Discourse texture in translation: towards a text-typological redefinition of theme and rheme." In H. Keith and I. Mason (eds.) *Translation in the Modern Languages Degree*. London: Regents College.

Hatim, B. (1989) "Text linguistics in the didactics of translation: the case of the verbal and nominal clause types in Arabic". *IRAL*, 27 (2), 137-144.

Hatim, B. and Mason, I. (1990) *Discourse and the Translator*. London: Longman.

Hatim, B. and Mason, I. (1997) *The Translator as Communicator*. London: Routledge.

Hawkins, J. A. (1983) *Word Order Universals*. London: Academic Press.

Hawthorn, J. (ed.) (1987) *Propaganda, Persuasion and Polemic*. London: Arnold.

Herman, E. S. and Chomsky, N. (2002) *Manufacturing Consent: The Political Economy of the Mass Media*. London: Pantheon.

Hodge, R. and Kress, G. (1979) *Language as Ideology*. London: Routledge.

Hodge, R. and Kress, G. (1988) *Social Semiotics*. Cambridge: Polity.

Hodge, R. and Kress, G. (1993) *Language as Ideology*. Second Edition. London: Routledge.

Jensen, K. B. (1987) "News as ideology: economic statistics and political ritual in television network news". *Journal of Communication*, 37 (1), 8-27.

Johnson, S. (2007) *Language in the Media: Representations, Identities, Ideologies (Advances in Sociolinguistics)*. London: Continuum.

Kamel, S. A. (1982) "Topicalization of the noun phrase in colloquial Cairene Arabic". Unpublished PhD thesis, Leeds University.

Keenan, E. L. (1978) "The syntax of subject-final languages". In W. P. Lehmann (ed.) *Syntactic Typology: Studies in the Phenomenology of Language*. Austin: University of Texas Press.

Keenan, E. O. and Schieffelin, B. (1976) "Foregrounding referents: a reconstruction of left dislocation in discourse". *Berkeley Linguistics Society*, 2, 240-257.

Kempson, R. (1975) *Presupposition and the Delimitation of Semantics*. London: Cambridge University Press.

Khalil, E. N. (2000) *Grounding in English and Arabic News Discourse*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Kress, G. (ed.) (1976) *Halliday: System and Function in Language*. London: Oxford University Press.

Kress, G. (1985) *Linguistic Processes in Sociocultural Practice*. Victoria: Deakin University Press.

Kress, G. (1988) *Communication and Culture: An Introduction*. Kensington: New South Wales University Press.

Kress, G. (1989) *Linguistic Process in Sociocultural Practice*. Second Edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Kress, G. (1996) "Representational resources and the production of subjectivity: questions for the theoretical development of Critical Discourse Analysis in a multicultural society." In C. R. Caldas-Coulthard and M. Coulthard (eds.) *Texts and Practices: Reading in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.

Kress, G. and van Leeuwen, T. (2001) *Multimodal Discourse: The Modes and Media of Contemporary Communication*. London: Arnold.

Krzyszowski, T. P. (1989) "Towards a typology of contrastive studies". In W. Oleksy (ed.) *Contrastive Pragmatics*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

- Labov, W. and Waletzky, J. (1967) "Narrative analysis: oral versions of personal experience". In J. Helm (ed.) *Essays on the Verbal and Visual Arts*. Seattle: University of Washington Press.
- Labov, W. (1972) "The transformation of experience in narrative syntax". In W. Labov *Language in the Inner City*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.
- Labov, W. (1978) *Sociolinguistic Patterns*. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Lassen, I. et al. (2006) *Mediating Ideology in Text and Image: Ten Critical Studies*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Lee, D. (1992) *Competing Discourses: Perspective and Ideology in Language*. London: Longman.
- Levinson, S. C. (1983) *Pragmatics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Levinson, S. (1988) "Putting linguistics on a proper footing: explorations in Goffman's concepts of participation". In P. Drew and A. Wootton (eds.) *Erving Goffman: Exploring the Interaction Order*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
- Li, C. (ed.) (1976) *Subject and Topic*. New York: Academic Press.
- Lippmann, W (1921) *Public Opinion*. New York: The Free Press.
- Mårdh, I. (1980) *Headlines: On the Grammar of English Front Page Headlines*. Lund: Liberläromedel.
- Marx, K. and Engels, F. (1970) *The German Ideology*. London: Lawrence and Wishart.
- Mathesius, M. (1964) "On linguistic characterology with illustrations from modern English". In J. Vachek (ed.) *A Prague School Reader in Linguistics*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

- Mathesius, V. (1939) "On information-bearing structure of the sentence". *Harvard Studies in Syntax and Semantics* (1975), 1, 467-480.
- Mathesius, V. (1942) "Language and style". *Čtení o jazyce a poezii*. Translated by Daneš (1974). Prague: Melantrich.
- Mathesius, V. (1974) *Čeština a Obecný Jazykozpyt [Czech Language and General Linguistics]*. Prague: Melantrich.
- McCabe, A. (1999) "Theme and thematic patterns in Spanish and English history texts". Unpublished PhD thesis, Aston University.
- McEnery, T. and Wilson, A. (1996) *Corpus Linguistics*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
- McEnery, T. et al. (2005) *Corpus-Based Language Studies: An Advanced Resource Book*. London: Routledge.
- Mellor, N. (2005) *The Making of Arab News*. Oxford: Rowman and Littlefield.
- Milroy, L. (1987) *Observing and Analysing Natural Language*. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Moutaouakil, A. (1989) *Pragmatic Functions in a Functional Grammar of Arabic*. Dordrecht: Foris Publications.
- Munday, J. (1997) "Systems in translation: a computer-assisted systemic analysis of the translation of García Márquez". Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Bradford.
- Munday, J. (2001) *Introducing Translation Studies. Theories and Applications*. London: Routledge.
- Obiedat, N. (1990) "A comparative study of thematization in Arabic and English from a text-type perspective". Unpublished MSc thesis, Heriot-Watt University.

- O'Halloran, K. (2003) *Critical Discourse Analysis and Language Cognition*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
- Parkinson, D. B. (1981) "VSO to SVO in modern standard Arabic: a study in diglossia syntax". *Al-Arabiyya*, 14, 24-37.
- Pennycook, A. (1994) "Incommensurable discourses?" *Applied Linguistics*, 15 (12), 115-138.
- Petöfi, J. S. and Franck, D. M. L. (eds.) (1973) *Presuppositions in Linguistics and Philosophy*. Frankfurt: Athenaeum.
- Prince, E. F. (1978) "A comparison of wh-clefts and it-clefts in discourse". *Language*, 54 (4), 883-906.
- Quirk, R. et al. (1972) *A Grammar of Contemporary English*. London: Longman.
- Reah, D. (2002) *The Language of Newspapers*. Second Edition. London: Routledge.
- Reiss, K. (1976) *Texttype und Übersetzungsmethode. Der operative Text*. Kronberg: Scriptor.
- Robins, K. et al. (1987) "Propaganda, information and social control". In J. Hawthorn (ed.) *Propaganda, Persuasion and Polemic*. London: Arnold.
- Rugh, W. A. (1987) *The Arab Press: News Media and Political Processes in the Arab World*. Second Edition. New York: Syracuse University Press.
- Schank, R. C. and Abelson, R. P. (1977) *Scripts, Plans, Goals and Understanding*. Hillsdale, N. J: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Schlesinger, P. (1987) *Putting 'Reality' Together: BBC News*. Second Edition. London: Methuen.

- Searle, J. R. (1969) *Speech Acts. An Essay in the Philosophy of Language*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Searle, J. R. (1976) "A classification of illocutionary acts". *Language in Society*, 5, 1-23.
- Searle, J. R. (1979) *Expression and Meaning. Studies in the Theory of Speech Acts*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Searle, J. R. (1996) *The Construction of Social Reality*. London: Penguin.
- Sharrock, A. and Anderson, D. (1981) "Language, thought and reality, again". *Sociology*, 15, 287-293.
- Simpson, P. (1993) *Language, Ideology and Point of View*. London: Routledge.
- Simpson, P. (2004) *Stylistics: A Resource Book for Students*. London: Routledge.
- Sinclair, J. (1991) *Corpus, Concordance, Collocation*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Smith, P. and Bell, A. (2007) "Unravelling the web of Discourse Analysis". In E. Devereux (ed.) *Media Studies: Key Issues and Debates*. London: Sage.
- Stubbs, M. (1997) "Whorf's children: critical comments on Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA)". In A. Ryan and A. Wray (eds.) *Evolving Models of Language*. Clevedon: Multilingual Matters.
- Stubbs, M. (2001) "Texts, corpora, and problems of interpretation: a response to Widdowson". *Applied Linguistics*, 22 (2), 149-172.
- Teruya, K. (2006) *A Systemic Functional Grammar of Japanese. Volume 1*. London: Continuum.
- Teskey, P. D. (1976) *Theme and Rheme in Spanish and English*. Coleraine: New University of Ulster.

- Thaliji, A-M. I. M. (1982) "Structure and function in Arabic". Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Edinburgh.
- Thompson, J. B. (1984) *Studies in the Theory of Ideology*. Cambridge: Polity Press.
- Titscher, S. et al. (2000) *Methods of Text and Discourse Analysis*. London: Sage.
- Tolson, A. (1996) *Mediations: Text and Discourse in Media Studies*. London: Arnold.
- Toolan, M. (1997) "What is critical discourse analysis and why are people saying such terrible things about it?" *Language and Literature*, 6 (2), 83-103.
- Traugott, E. C. and Pratt, M. L. (1980) *Linguistics for Students of Literature*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovitch.
- Trew, T. (1979) "Theory and ideology at work." In R. Fowler et al. *Language and Control*. London: Routledge.
- Trosborg, A. (ed.) (1997) *Text Typology and Translation*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Tuchman, G. (1978) *Making News. A Study in the Construction of Reality*. New York. Free Press.
- van Dijk, T. A. (1980) *Macrostructures*. Hillsdale, N. J: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- van Dijk, T. A. (ed.) (1985) *Discourse and Communication: New Approaches to the Analysis of Mass Media Discourse and Communication*. Berlin: De Gruyter.
- van Dijk, T. A. (1988a) *News as Discourse*. Hillsdale: Lawrence Erlbaum.
- van Dijk, T. A. (1988b) *News Analysis: Case Studies of International and National News in the Press*. Hillsdale: Lawrence Erlbaum.
- van Dijk, T. A. (1993) *Elite Discourse and Racism. Sage Series on Race and Ethnic Relations. Volume 6*. Newbury Park: Sage.

van Dijk, T. A. (1996) "Discourse, power and access." In C. R. Caldas-Coulthard and R. Coulthard (eds.) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.

van Dijk, T. A. (1997) *Discourse as Social Interaction*. London: Sage.

van Dijk, T. A. (1998) *Ideology: A Multidisciplinary Approach*. London: Sage.

van Dijk, T. A. (2001) "Multidisciplinary CDA: a plea for diversity". In R. Wodak and M. Meyer (eds.) *Methods of Critical discourse Analysis*. London: Sage.

van Dijk, T. A. and Kintsch, W. (1983) *Strategies of Discourse Comprehension*. New York: Academic Press.

van Leeuwen, T. (1996) "The representation of social actors". In C. R. Caldas-Coulthard and M. Coulthard (eds.) *Texts and Practices: Readings in Critical Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.

van Leeuwen, T. (2008) *Discourse and Practice: New Tools for Critical Discourse Analysis*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Verschueren, J. (1985) *What People Say They Do with Words*. Norwood, N. J: Ablex.

Weil, H. (1879) *De l'Ordre des Mots dans les Langues Anciennes Comparees aux Langues Modernes*. Third Edition. Paris: F. Vieweg.

Weil, H. (1887) *The Order of Words in the Ancient Languages Compared with that of the Modern Languages*. Translated by C. W. Super. Boston: Ginn and Co.

Werlich, E. (1976) *A Text Grammar of English*. Heidelberg: Quelle & Meyer.

Widdowson, H. G. (2004) *Text, Context, Pretext: Critical Issues in Discourse Analysis*. London: Oxford.

Wilson, D. (1975) *Presuppositions and Non-Truth Conditional Semantics*. New York: Academic Press.

Wodak, R. (ed.) (1989) *Language, Power and Ideology. Studies in Political Discourse*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Wodak, R. (2001) "What CDA is about - a summary of its history, important concepts and its developments". In R. Wodak and M. Meyer (eds.) *Methods of Critical Discourse Analysis: Introducing Qualitative Methods*. London: Sage.

Wodak, R and Chilton, P. (eds.) (2005) *A New Agenda in (Critical) Discourse Analysis*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Wodak, R. and Meyer, M. (eds.) (2001) *Methods of Critical Discourse Analysis: Introducing Qualitative Methods*. London: Sage.

Wright, W. (1896) *A Grammar of the Arabic Language. Volumes 1 and 2*. Third Edition. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Wright, W. (1974) *A Grammar of the Arabic Language*. Beirut: Librairie de Liban.

Young, D. (1980) *The Structure of English Clauses*. London: Hutchinson.

Yule, G. (1996) *Pragmatics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Zughoul, M. R. (1979) "Diglossia in Arabic: investigating solutions". *Anthropological Linguistics*, 22, 201-217.